TABLE OF CONTENTS

CHAPTER THREE

SOUTH AFRICA, SADC AND MERCOSUR: SOCIO-ECONOMIC CO-OPERATION AND SECURITY

CHAPTER FOUR

BILATERAL MILITARY CO-OPERATION BETWEEN SOUTH AFRICA AND THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES

CHAPTER FIVE

MULTILATERAL MILITARY CO-OPERATION IN THE SOUTH ATLANTIC REGION

CHAPTER SIX

EVALUATION

List of Tables

List of Figures

List of Maps

INTRODUCTION

1. OBJECTIVES OF THE STUDY

Prior to 1990 – the year in which a new and inclusive political dispensation was introduced in the country – South Africa's security considerations were largely determined by both the manoeuvrings of the Cold War superpowers (the United States of America and the former Soviet Union) and the threats posed by the neighbouring countries. Because of its unacceptable racial and political policies, South Africa acquired a *pariah* status, thus resulting in limited membership of international organisations, and bilateral agreements proved difficult to conclude.

Even though South Africa's foreign policy with regard to Southern Africa was characterised by destabilisation during the period prior to 1990, the country did everything possible to win the support and co-operation of especially the North American and West European countries. Minimal, if ever any, attention was paid to the strategic value of trans-Atlantic relations with countries in Latin America, especially those countries which constitute the Mercosur/Mercosul (Southern Cone Common Market), namely, Argentina, Brazil, Paraguay and Uruguay, with Bolivia and Chile as associate members. Like South Africa, these countries have experienced long periods of disproportionately high influence by the military, as well as the unbridled role of the military in politics. Despite these similarities, South Africa's security considerations do not seem to have seriously brought these countries into its strategic equation.

This study does not intend dealing with these countries in their institutional capacity as member states of the Mercosur group, but rather as individual entities that happen to constitute Mercosur. However, since the Mercosur group has an important regional parallel in the form of the Southern African Development Community (SADC), it will also be discussed as an institution, especially in the sections dealing with economic relations and regional security.

2. PROBLEM POSTULATION

This study identifies the following factors which contribute towards the propositions listed below:

- South Africa had a significant strategic value to the countries that now constitute Mercosur during the period starting in 1980. This date (1980) is selected, mainly because it was only after this period that new regional security challenges (such as during the Falklands War of 1982), especially in the military sphere, occurred, which could have had direct security implications for South Africa.

- The end of military dictatorships in the Mercosur countries and apartheid in South Africa, which paved the way for the ushering in of democracy on both shores of the Atlantic Ocean, signalled commonalities that could be exploited for mutual benefit. This is particularly important in the security arena.

The study is based on the following propositions:

- South Africa's security considerations are increasingly becoming inseparably entangled with those of its south-west Atlantic neighbours, notably Brazil and Argentina.

- Security in the broader sense, which also includes social and economic dimensions, requires a holistic approach and South Africa's security relations with Mercosur could offer numerous benefits for the general good of its citizens.

- The effects of the global crisis in markets, which affected both developed and emergent markets at the end of the 1990s, showed that South Africa's virtual or benign neglect of Latin America can no longer be sustained if it is serious about being a global competitor of note.

- South Africa's global ambitions, including permanent membership of the United Nations Security Council, can only materialise with considerable support from the Latin American countries.

A study of this nature is not only necessitated by a sheer lack of similar studies in South Africa, but by the ever-increasing need to have readily available information on Latin American countries, especially the Mercosur. The Mercosur group has been hailed as a success story of the 1990s, which could provide significant lessons for the ailing SADC.

3. METHODOLOGY

In analysing South Africa's security relations with the Mercosur countries, an eclectic approach, including description and analysis will be applied. A comprehensive literature survey, which will include material originating from these countries, forms a major part of the sources for the study. Challenges associated with linguistic limitations were envisaged, but alternative mechanisms to deal with them were found. These mechanisms included the use of translation facilities, especially at universities, and also attempting to secure the co-operation of embassies to translate some of the material, which might be in the language of their country.

Because of the diverse nature of aspects that are explored in this study, both institutional and issue-based approaches were used at different stages of the study. While an institutional approach was used in analysing the role of the countries under investigation in the context of, for example, the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic (ZPCSA), specific issues, such as defence industries, were addressed either separately or in combination with the institutional framework.

4. DEMARCATION

The study is divided into the following chapters:

CHAPTER 1: SECURITY AND CO-OPERATION: A CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK

With the broadening of the concept of security, new dimensions have evolved, thus introducing new challenges to international relations. This chapter seeks to identify and deal with the various aspects of security as they pertain to bilateral and multilateral security arrangements. Factors that constitute and contribute to threat perception and vulnerability are also discussed.

While security is primarily discussed from the point of view of securing national interests through the conclusion of international agreements and/or treaties, internal aspects of security also receive attention. This outward-looking approach to security helps shed some light on the justification or lack thereof, for South Africa to cement ties with the Latin American countries, especially on security issues.

CHAPTER 2: THE HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT AND STRUCTURE OF MERCOSUR

The formation of Mercosur was the culmination of a process that was initiated almost two decades after the Second World War (WW II). The process had been prompted by many factors, which ranged from the proliferation of regional organisations to globalisation. This chapter provides a perspective on the historical evolution of the Mercosur group and also identifies the organs and functions of the group.

A good understanding of the structure and functioning of the Mercosur group would enable South Africa (or any other extra-regional country) to identify specific areas of possible co-operation and the relevant mechanisms for doing so. It concludes by analysing the performance of Mercosur.

CHAPTER 3: SOUTH AFRICA, SADC AND MERCOSUR: SOCIO-ECONOMIC CO-OPERATION AND SECURITY

Issues of social security and development are often inter-linked. The main focus of the Mercosur group is currently on economic development and trade. All the efforts to ensure regional security, especially through the use of the armed forces, are often aimed at securing commercial and trade routes. This chapter looks into the nature of economic activity in the South Atlantic, which involves South Africa and the Mercosur countries. Particular attention

is also paid to the benefits for the Southern African sub-region through South Africa's participation in trans-Atlantic arrangements.

It is undeniably true that the demise of the Cold War propelled economic issues to the forefront in international relations. Security issues have taken a backstage role and, when these are addressed, it is normally because they are seen as potential impediments to prosperous economic and social development. Trans-national and trans-continental crime syndicates, such as those linked to drug trafficking, money-laundering, piracy on the high seas and, in some cases, small-arms proliferation, are all security issues which have a negative impact on the economic well-being of nations. This chapter seeks to address these aspects with regard to South Africa and the countries constituting the Mercosur group.

CHAPTER 4: BILATERAL MILITARY CO-OPERATION BETWEEN SOUTH AFRICA AND THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES

South Africa's historical relations with the individual countries of the Mercosur grouping are discussed. An attempt was made to trace military relations that South Africa had with the Mercosur countries prior to and after the 1994 political dispensation.

The existing formal and informal Memoranda of Understanding (MoU) between South Africa and the member states of the Mercosur group provide a suitable point of departure. Through these MoUs, South Africa undertakes joint projects which not only help with the transfer of skills and expertise, but also reduce costs on capital that is required to conduct such projects. Included in this regard are search-and-rescue operations in the South Atlantic Ocean, and also joint military exercises.

CHAPTER 5: MULTILATERAL SECURITY CO-OPERATION IN THE SOUTH ATLANTIC REGION

This chapter looks into the regional groupings/arrangements covering the South Atlantic region in which security is the main focus. Multilateral arrangements in the form of agreements, conventions, treaties and MoUs to which South Africa and the Mercosur members are parties, are broadly analysed.

While the historical development of the ZPCSA in relation to the role of the member states of Mercosur and that of South Africa (when it joined it in 1994) is addressed, more attention is paid to the future role of this regional security arrangement in the 21st century. The active involvement of some of the Southern African states (such as Namibia and Angola) in the ZPCSA implies that South Africa's security arrangements with her Atlantic neighbours should adopt an approach that benefits the whole sub-region.

CHAPTER 6: EVALUATION

This chapter summarises the whole study and briefly discusses the findings per chapter. The original assumptions are validated and propositions tested. The chapter concludes by giving an indication of the areas of study that still require to be supplemented with additional research.

CHAPTER ONE

SECURITY AND CO-OPERATION: A CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK

1. INTRODUCTION

States continuously pursue strategies and implement policies aimed purportedly at ensuring the general welfare and well-being of their citizenry. With the increase in world production and consumption of goods, services and information, it has increasingly become impossible to satisfy individual needs and lifestyles. To ameliorate this condition, states have had to co-operate along a whole range of issues and areas of mutual interest for the benefit of their citizens. Most of the current collaborative mechanisms can be traced back to the formation of the United Nations (UN) at the end of the Second World War (WW II). The UN became a mother body responsible *inter alia* for establishing institutions such as the International Court of Justice (ICJ), the World Trade Organisation (WTO), and to introduce rules and customs which collectively would constitute international law. The UN-governed intergovernmental relations did not replace bilateral arrangements initiated by individual member states. Instead, the UN's rules-based co-operation regimes made the international system fairly stable and predictable, and contributed towards the codification of modern-day international law.

It is crucial for states to develop, through collaborative structures, conditions that would enable citizens to pursue their livelihoods without fear or threat to their lives, limbs and property. The generic term for this ideal societal condition is 'security'. Evidence abounds in the historical evolution or creation of states which confirms that the original *raison d'être* for the existence of states was the provision of security. This *raison d'être* defined the relationship between governments and the populations. This relationship is encapsulated in the phrase 'state idea' which describes "a set of distinctive purposes to which the bulk of a population subscribe, a complex of shared traditions, experiences and objectives." [1] It is this quest for the 'state idea' which is predominated by the constant pursuit for security that provides the impetus for states, through governments, to conduct domestic politics and international relations in a manner that seeks to satisfy security.

This chapter briefly looks into the various forms of international co-operation and comprehensively discusses the dimensions of security both in its traditional and modern senses. The evolution of security as an object for policy-makers and strategists is discussed within the contexts of its applicability at national, international and global levels. Security is ultimately viewed from the state-centric perspective, where states remain the dominant role-players in the international system, although the broader meaning of security is taken into account. The chapter concludes with a model – the 'Security Pyramid' – which seeks to explain the gradual progression of states through different levels as security priorities of states change. It also locates the nature of South Africa's relations with the Mercosul/Mercosur[2] (Southern Cone Common Market) countries – Argentina, Brazil, Paraguay and Uruguay, with Bolivia and Chile as associate members – on the pyramid with a view to explaining the justifications and compelling reasons for cementing trans-Atlantic relations in the Southern Cone with security as a central issue.

2. INTERNATIONAL CO-OPERATION

The imperatives or incentives for states to co-operate are diverse and numerous. In addition to that, it is such incentives or motives which dictate the nature and form such co-operation has to adopt and, most importantly, the level of commitment among the party states.

2.1 IMPERATIVES AND MOTIVATIONS FOR CO-OPERATION

The evolution of the nation-state, especially during the latter half of the nineteenth century, imposed new and daunting challenges for the international system. One of the regular means of communication and interaction between and among such states was largely through war or threats of war. Violent inter-state conflicts were (and still are) a direct result of competition for possession of, or access to, natural resources and raw materials. These commodities enable states to sustain their military forces which, in turn, enable them to project power beyond national borders. It is this nexus between resources and the quest for power to which not only many violent international conflicts could be attributed, but also the widening gap between the global rich and global poor (also known as the Global North and the Global South respectively). As realists argue, "military power is a function of economic prowess".[3] Although in the pre-WW II era the converse was true, as strong military states with expansionist proclivities managed to secure access to resources and raw materials, this is

arguably not true in the post-Cold War era. This could be attributed to the fact that democratic states, as a general rule, settle their disputes amicably. However, democratic states also happen to wield massive military resources that could be used in cases where their strategic interests are threatened. The 1990-1991 Gulf crisis bears contemporary testimony to this truism.[4]

Given the declining base of natural resources, general human needs (physiological, social, political and other spheres) exert great pressure on people to devise innovative means to satisfy them. Irreplaceable natural resources such as water and geophysical space aggravate pressure for innovation. To this end, no country could possibly produce all products sufficiently for its population without relying on other states. The notion of autarky or economic self-sufficiency, which dominated the pre-Industrial Age international system and therefore provided impetus to expansionism, lost favour and relevance during the latter half of the nineteenth century. The perceived justification or rationale for autarkic approaches was that military campaigns could be conducted with little or no fear of disruption of the country's commercial activities through military blockades and air raids. Autarkic countries, like Nazi Germany, would stockpile essential supplies and develop local substitutes for import commodities.[5]

Instead of the economic self-sufficiency approach, states opened their markets through the notion of comparative advantage. Comparative advantage refers to "the principle that any two states will benefit if each specialises in those goods it produces comparatively cheaply and acquires, through trade, goods that it can only produce at a higher cost."[6] While this approach resulted in states concentrating and focusing mainly on those economic activities that were profitable, it also enabled them to reduce production costs and release financial resources for other social imperatives. Consequently, the international culture of global inter-dependence was engendered, thus making each country reliant on raw materials whose origins could be traced to any corner of the globe. Ever-increasing mass production, mass consumption demands and mass communication networks further facilitated, but also complicated, this process. For instance, the need for more consumables necessitated increased production which, in turn, meant increased use of energy, thus resulting in excessive emissions of hazardous gases into the atmosphere.

Another area of collaboration is security. The conduct of war is an extremely expensive and disruptive enterprise, and therefore if it can be avoided by creating common rules of dealing with conflicts or disputes, such an option should be followed. To this end, numerous international agreements have been spawned. In addition to diplomatic channels through which threats of war can be dealt with, there are also procedures for beginning and ending wars; treatment of prisoners of war (POWs); prohibitions of certain kinds of weapons in war such as chemical and biological weapons, and so forth. Most co-operation in the security field is attained through the formation of security communities. The concept of 'security community' was coined by Karl Deutsch in the late 1950s. He identified two types of security communities, namely pluralistic and amalgamated, where the latter would be characterised by the creation of institutions within the framework of a political community, and the former would be based on the compatibility of values, responsiveness to each other's needs and predictability of policy goals by political elites.[7]

Thus the motivations and imperatives for co-operation stem from pragmatic necessities induced by the eternal desire to survive. Common rules and regulations transcending national borders were therefore devised with a view to mitigating potential for disruption by either accident or design.[8] However, as already indicated, the nature and form of co-operation between and among states are determined largely by the extent to which each state hopes to benefit from such co-operation.

2.2 FORMS OF CO-OPERATION

Co-operation among states could be conducted either on a bilateral or multilateral basis, but the former is more common. The strength of bilateralism lies in it being tailor-made to suit the unique circumstances and requirements of the parties involved. However, its glaring weaknesses include the fact that it fuels accusations of conspiracy among neighbours and has the potential of causing regional fragmentation, as one state's ally could be the other's foe. Furthermore, it reverts the international system back into the self-help approach which dominated the pre-First World War (WW I) era. Multilateralism recognises the interdependence and interconnectedness of regional and, in most cases, global needs. Multilateralism denounces isolationism and promotes constructive internationalism among states, thus compelling such states to consider the interests of other states before designing and implementing national policies. Co-operation among states could be in the political,

economic, environmental, security or in any other sphere of human endeavour. The compatibility of political systems facilitates co-operation in other fields. The post-Cold War era saw the emergence of economic co-operation taking the centre stage and becoming the international currency which compelled states to co-operate, especially in the security arena. The common feature of international co-operation is that it normally takes one or a combination of the following forms, namely *setting standards, obligations, allocations* and *prohibitions*.[9]

2.2.1 Setting standards

The concern about standards stems from a host of factors, including unequal levels of development, technological advancement, maturity of political and economic systems and, most importantly, the anarchical nature of the international system. The realist notions of self-interest and the quest for superior relative power *vis-à-vis* other states are as valid in the twenty-first century as they were during the previous one. Devising international standards remains an international responsibility, but the implementation and supervision rests largely with individual countries. This self-monitoring of individual states is made possible by all types of sanctions and punitive measures that are put in place for those who flout the rules. Such measures could include blacklisting involved role-players; withdrawing international funding; and the possibility of losing market share in the global economy. Services and products susceptible to such strict international controls include aviation services, medicines and drugs, goods, nuclear facilities and so forth.[10]

2.2.2 Obligations

States have obligations and responsibilities towards one another. Such obligations could be due to the geographic location of facilities owned by countries or where specific capabilities reside with some countries. For instance, it is not all the littoral states that have the capacity to conduct search-and-rescue operations in their territorial waters. Thus, it is not uncommon for neighbouring states to be obligated in terms of an international convention to assume responsibilities stretching beyond national borders. Since this arrangement is determined and agreed to within a multilateral framework — such as the UN — the obligated state cannot be accused of violating the territorial integrity of its neighbour. The United Nations Convention

on the Law of Seas (UNCLAS), for instance, also stipulates that states should not conduct activities detrimental to their neighbours.

2.2.3 Allocations

The Westphalian notion that states are sovereign and equal lies at the root of this specific form of international co-operation. The equality of states presupposes that states should share equitably the resources that are deemed to belong to all humanity. Whether or not a state is capable of optimally utilising the resource is immaterial. For instance, most littoral states in the developing world have Exclusive Economic Zones (EEZs) which stretch far beyond their elementary naval capacity either to protect, defend or monitor them. Some states are said to have massive oil reserves in their continental shelves, but they do not have the technology, expertise and financial resources to benefit from this. This does not necessarily mean that they should lose ownership of such untapped resources.

2.2.4 Prohibitions

As much as states agree to ensure that certain things are done (obligations), they also have to ensure that certain things are not done (prohibitions). Prohibitions are a variation of standard-setting in the sense that they force states to refrain from actions which might be nefarious to other states. Most of the agreements that cover obligations also include prohibitions. This is particularly important to prevent party states from, for instance, entering into agreements which negate others — thus causing instability in the understanding and interpretation of international law. The nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty (NPT) of 1968, for instance, specifically prohibits nuclear states from transferring nuclear technology and know-how to non-nuclear states.[11] Similarly, the Antarctic Treaty (1 December 1959) prohibits military activity in Antarctica.[12]

As will be demonstrated below, co-operation in the security arena incorporates virtually all these forms of collaborative interaction among states. The preceding discussion on forms of co-operation partially disguises the very important ways in which effective state co-operation is hampered. These become conspicuous when co-operation in the realm of security is scrutinised. In this regard, Snyder[13] identifies three schools of thought, namely the *realists,*

neoliberal institutionalists and *constructivists*. Realists posit that states are power or security maximisers that are not keen to co-operate, despite sharing common interests, because of the anarchical nature of the international system. According to institutionalists, the realists' dilemma is resolved by the creation of institutions that shape the interests and practices of states through, for instance, standard setting, obligations or prohibitions. Thus, institutionalists advocate an international system based on reciprocity and symbiotic interaction. Unlike realists and institutionalists, constructivists argue that international politics are "socially constructed." Therefore, the international system is less about the distribution of material resources and/or capabilities and more about establishing and cementing social relationships. By understanding the social patterns of enmity and/or amity between and among states, the chances for co-operation, even on security issues, are increased significantly.

3. CONCEPTUAL ANALYSIS OF SECURITY

Since the beginning of the process of modern state formation in the nineteenth century, the quest for security has been a rallying point for populations living in independent and subordinate territories. Threats to security ranged from the denial of political and economic rights by colonial powers or governments serving sectarian interests at the expense of other citizens to the possibility of aggression by another power. All the efforts aimed at preventing or eliminating these conditions were generically referred to as ‘security’. But this concept remains elusive as it expands and contracts with time, place and circumstance.

3.1 SECURITY: A COMMON UNDERSTANDING

Despite the fact that for centuries ‘security’, as a concept, has been part of the military-political vocabulary among policy-makers and scholars of politics alike, consensus still does not exist as to what it really means. Thus, questions can be asked, such as: What is security? Who are the main objects / beneficiaries of security? To what extent can the security of the government or state be equated to that of the individual?

These questions do not only pose a challenge to the policy-makers (who have to provide resources to ensure ‘security’) and policy-implementers (who have to implement government policy in the name of vaguely defined objectives associated with ‘security’), but also for

scholars of security (who have to interpret or 'unpack' the concept of security). Realising that there are numerous definitions of security, most of which differ slightly in terms of emphasis, Buzan concluded that "the nature of security defies pursuit of an agreed generic definition."[14] It was this evasion by Buzan that drew criticism from scholars, such as Baldwin,[15] who believe that conceptual analysis of security is an essential intellectual exercise required for both scholarly research and policy-formulation. Baldwin cites Opperheim, who argues that "the elucidation of the language of political science is by no means an idle exercise in semantics, but in many instances a most effective way to solve substantive problems of research."[16]

Concurring with Baldwin, Rothschild[17] provides four compelling justifications for a definitional analysis of security. According to Rothschild, the principles or definitions of security provide, firstly, some guidance for the policies made by governments. While theorists (academics) might devise theories of security, they have to be understood and/or implemented by officials. Secondly, definitions of security are essential in guiding public opinion on security-related issues. Thirdly, a clear understanding of security, as a concept, is also important in order to effectively implement government policies that pertain to security. For instance, the international community was only able to criticise the nuclear weapons policies of the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation (NATO) when it understood security-related concepts such as deterrence strategies and confidence-building measures. Lastly, the definition of security will in the final analysis impact on the distribution of money and power.[18] Aware of these convincing arguments for a conceptual elucidation of security, Mangold[19] warns that the law of diminishing returns is as applicable to the search for definitions as it is for actual security. Mangold further observes that "a balance has to be struck between the siren call of intellectual precision and the untidy reality of a heterogeneous and rapidly changing world in which states differ substantially in what they are trying to secure."[20] Put differently, Mangold cautions against the excessive insistence on finding an absolute definition as it could end up being counter-productive. However, a selection of attempts by other scholars to define security could be provided, including the following:

- *Ian Bellany* defines security as "a relative freedom from war coupled with a relatively high expectation that defeat will not be a consequence of any war that should occur" [21];

- *Laurence Martin* defines security as "the assurance of future well-being" [22];

- *John E. Mroz* defines security as "the relative freedom from harmful threats" [23];

- *Ole Wæver* is of the opinion that "one can view 'security' as that which is in language theory called a speech act: … it is the utterance itself that is the act … By saying 'security' a state representative moves the particular case into a specific area; claiming a special right to use the means necessary to block this development." [24]

- For *Arnold Wolfers*, "security, in any objective sense, measures the absence of threats to acquired values, in a subjective sense, the absence of fear that such values will be attacked." [25]

A group of experts on non-military aspects of security, meeting in Tashkent, Russia, in May 1990, adopted the following operational definition of security:

> Security is a condition in which states consider that there is no danger of military attack, political pressure or economic coercion, so that they are able to pursue freely their own development and progress. The security of individuals and communities of which states are constituted is ensured by the guarantee and effective exercise of individual freedom, political, social and economic rights, as well as by the preservation or restoration of a liveable environment for present and future generations. Security also implies that essential human needs, notably in the field of nutrition, education, housing and public health, are ensured on a permanent basis. An adequate protection against dangers to security should also be maintained. The ways and means to attain security may be defined in national, intergovernmental, non-governmental or global terms.[26]

Unlike the first three definitions (as provided by Bellany, Martin and Mroz), Wæver's and Wolfers's definitions emphasise the centrality of values in the security discourse. However, all of these definitions recognise both the subjective and perceptual nature of security. The use of terms such as 'well-being', 'threats' and 'values' in defining security contributes towards its conceptual ambiguity and elasticity in meaning – thus making security a

permanently contested concept. In a nutshell, the condition of security presupposes the existence of a world free from physical, psychological and psycho-sociological dangers or threats and uncertainty.[27]

This raises serious doubts as to whether or not the quest for security is not a futile exercise bordering on extreme idealism or utopianism because, as a general rule, no state or group of people experiences perfect security or absolute insecurity.[28] This is as true at individual level (individual security) as it is, if not more, at national and international levels (national security and international security). States are not perfectly secure or completely insecure, but rather experience either condition in degrees.[29] Even during the peace negotiations at Versailles at the end of WW I, many critics identified security as a relative concept and concluded that even bilateral and multilateral military agreements satisfied the security requirements only to a small degree. They argued that states are permanently in a state of mutual suspicion.[30] In the post-WW II era, mutual suspicion among states and/or groups of states was perfected into an art of sorts along an ideological divide which was premised on the ability of one state or group of states to predict and anticipate the actions of its ideological enemy. Despite the demise of the Cold War, this scenario of 'benign' suspicion continues unabated as the revolution in the security understanding continues to unfold.

3.2 CHANGING NATURE AND FOCUS OF SECURITY

The traditional conception of security emphasised the primacy of military threats and prescribed strong action – primarily military – as a response to such threats. This approach has gradually lost favour and support. For the greater part of the Cold War era, inter-state wars were rare, especially in those regions in which both superpowers were actively involved. This restraint in resorting to war stemmed from fear of possible escalation to nuclear exchange involving the superpowers. Thus, indirect and, mostly, non-military strategies were used. For instance, the United States (US) made extensive use of the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) in its 'containment strategy', not only to gather information on the crucial elements of the Soviet Union's economy, but also on how to sow political dissent inside that country. Realising that there was no immediate threat to its territorial inviolability, the US also concentrated on developing infrastructure such as new highways that could be used for rapidly transporting armaments throughout the whole country in the event of war.[31] Similarly, the former Soviet Union launched massive misinformation campaigns and provided

support – financial and/or military – to socialist governments or to insurgent groups, which sought to overthrow governments aligned with the West. These include Afghanistan, Angola and Cambodia. Some observers have even suggested that in most cases both the Soviet Union's as well as the US's involvement in such countries was not so much about security but ideology – that is, the East-West conflict was based on a dichotomy of capitalism and socialism.[32] They viewed security through ideological lenses. However, the quest for security became even more complex when the concept of national security was coined.

The following sections use Hartendorn's classification of 'national security', 'international security' and 'global security'. Hartendorn[33] concedes, like many other analysts, that the evolution of the security paradigm from national security to international security and then to global security, demonstrates the changes that the international system has undergone over centuries. Specific values, threats and capabilities apply to each cluster of security type. The complexity of security challenges also indicates the evolution of political systems from those based on insular nation-states, through regionally-based inter-governmental interaction, to a highly interdependent global community of peoples.[34]

4. NATIONAL SECURITY

Flowing from the preceding discussion on 'security', another concept which formed part of the political lexicon is 'national security'. Both concepts are sometimes, and in most cases, used interchangeably as if they are synonyms. National security, as a derivative of 'security' creates the impression of being much narrower in focus and much more circumscribed in applicability than 'security'. It also creates the impression that it is largely inward-looking in orientation and defensive in posture where the interests and welfare of the citizens are its primary objectives. Based on that premise, national security strategies would then be designed to achieve such objectives, and this would be reflected in the nature, character and elements of such strategies. However, this does not seem to be as neatly circumscribed as it is perceived to be. For instance, in a document issued by the US White House in May 1997, it is stated that the ultimate goal of the US's national security strategy is to ensure the protection of the country's fundamental and enduring needs, which includes protecting the lives and safety of people; maintaining the sovereignty of the country, with its values, institutions and territory intact; and also providing for the prosperity of the nation and its people.[35] But it further states that it would seek to create conditions "in the world where [the US's] interests

are rarely threatened, and when they are, we have effective means of addressing those threats."[36] This contradicts the perceived inward-looking nature of national security and indicates a commitment to counter threats to national security irrespective of the geographic origin of such threats.

4.1 NATIONAL SECURITY: A COMMON UNDERSTANDING

There seems to be general agreement that the concept of security, particularly national security, is elastic and constantly adopting newer meanings. Since national security has apparently not reached a state of conceptual maturity where there is common understanding of what constitutes it and what does not, it is prudent to look at *classical* and *modern views* of national security.

4.1.1 Classic view of national security

A central question, which recurs in the security debate, is: Who is, or should be, the legitimate beneficiary of security to which national governments are always referring? Is it the individual, which is "an irreducible basic unit to which the concept of security is applied"[37], or the state which, in the Hobbesian view, has the primary responsibility to ensure security?[38] This paradox is further compounded by both the vagueness of the concept of national security and its relationship with individual security. Flowing from that, it could also be argued as to *how 'national' is national security*? For instance, at the height of colonial rule in Africa generally and Southern Africa, in particular, the colonialists constantly referred to national security that was misperceived as including the territory and all its inhabitants. But on the contrary, such national security concerned the personal security and freedoms of the European colonialists at the expense of the Africans and it was used as a pretext to suppress the individual security and freedoms of those African inhabitants.[39]

Even though the use of the phrase 'national security' was first recorded in the early 1790s when Yale University undergraduates debated the question, "Does the National Security depend on fostering Domestic Industries", the modern etymology of national security as a concept can be traced back to the post-WW I era, and by 1945 it was already widely used in political discourse. However, at that stage no attempt was made to clarify it – probably because then there was no need for such an exercise.[40]

Numerous definitions of 'national security' have been provided and each one emphasises different aspects. The following definitions have enjoyed support:

- *Penelope Hartland-Thunberg*: "national security is the ability of a nation to pursue successfully its national interests, as it sees them, any place in the world"[41];

- *Walter Lippmann*: "a nation is secure to the extent to which it is not in danger of having to sacrifice core values if it wishes to avoid war, and is able, if challenged, to maintain them by a victory in such a war"[42];

- *William E. Barber* defines 'national security policy' as "that part of government policy that has the objective of creating national and international political conditions that are favourable for the protection or extension of vital national values, against existing or potential adversaries."[43]

- *Amos Jordan and William Taylor*, (as cited by Romm)*:* "national security, however, has a more extensive meaning than protection from physical harm; it also implies protection, through a variety of means, of vital economic and political interests, the loss of which could threaten fundamental values and the vitality of the state"[44];

- *Charles Maier*, (as cited by Romm)*:* "national security … is best defined as the capacity to control those domestic and foreign conditions that the public opinion of a given community believes necessary to enjoy its own self-determination or autonomy, prosperity, and well-being."[45]

Brown's definition of national security seems to encompass most, if not all, the elements of national security as contained in the above definitions. He defines national security as "the ability to preserve the nation's physical integrity and territory; to maintain its economic relations with the rest of the world on reasonable terms; to protect its nature, institutions, and governance from disruption from outside; and to control its borders."[46]

The essence of these definitions lies in the *ability* of the government to follow a specific course of action to ensure national security by pursuing *national interests*, or protecting *core (vital) values* or defending the *physical existence of the state* and is largely directed at predominantly external (and often specific military) threats. The visible limitation of these definitions lies not only in their failure to recognise the multi-faceted nature of security, especially national security, but their over-emphasis on 'action' or the 'ability to act'. These latter two aspects seem to ignore the perceptual nature of security. Even if such aspects were to be understood in Wæver's conception of security as a 'speech act', they would still be misleading. While Brown's definition already showed insights into the more modern view of national security by expanding it to include economic issues, it is still embedded in the classical mode of thinking which viewed national borders as impermeable and absolute.

4.1.2 Modern view of national security

The new conception of national security recognises the significance of territorial borders but it is not oblivious to extra-territorial factors beyond control of the nation state. National security is increasingly becoming dependent on the real or perceived security of neighbouring states. While recognising the significance of military prowess, the modern view no longer recognises it as an absolute guarantor of national security. National security is viewed as multi-dimensional in nature and therefore as requiring a multi-dimensional approach. These dimensions include socio-economic development, political stability, democratic and corruption-free governance, and non-offensive military postures. Increasingly the pyramid of priorities or instruments of national security is topped more by socio-economic development than military prowess.

As already indicated, the classic notion of national security emphasises the 'ability to act'. This approach presupposes the existence of two preconditions: political will and abundant resources. Political will is a precondition for any action that the incumbent government may take in the name of defending national security. A common understanding between the political structures and the public as to what constitutes a 'threat' to national security is imperative to reinforce the political will. However, the main test is the availability of resources to carry out appropriate actions in defence of national security. In other words, poor states would be less capable of dealing with an action-driven national security approach,

as resources will, in all probability, be devoted to other spheres of human survival. The view, which sees national security as a 'state of being' as opposed to an 'ability to act', does not run the risk of diverting the much needed resources to projects aimed at improving national security as though the latter were an end in itself and a state of total security an achievable ideal. In fact, Garnett[47] observed that "[n]ational security is a complex term capable of both wide and narrow definition, but whatever its meaning, no state can ever achieve absolute security. Relative security is the best that a state can hope for and for all states this is a major policy goal."

Recognising the failure of scholars to concur on the essential elements that constitute national security, Al-Mashat[48] identifies two categories of definitions that could be regarded as forming the basis of modern thinking on national security. These are: 'strategic definition' and the 'economic non-strategic definition'. The first category concentrates on abstract issues such as values and preservation of independence and sovereignty of the state. The second category emphasises the importance of maintaining an open and smooth flow of vital economic resources and the non-military aspects of state functions. The value approach has as numerous flaws for analytical purposes as does the economic non-military approach. The value approach suffers from the complex nature of values. There is no universal understanding of what constitutes 'core' or 'vital' values, and this has numerous political and practical implications within the nation state. Individuals, states and other social actors have diverse values. The list of values could include public safety, economic welfare, autonomy and psychological well-being.[49]

Widening the concept of national security, as suggested by the second approach also poses many challenges for the state concerned. This stems particularly from the view that the moment an issue acquires a national security status, it affects the order of national priorities as they exist and also the allocation of resources – thus making it susceptible to abuse by the political elites.[50] The lack of definition of national security provides a scope for power-maximising strategies by political and military elites.[51] From a political practitioner's point of view, national security then becomes a concept of political convenience.[52]

However, Mangold[53] provides two broad categories of interpretation for the definitions of national security, namely, the 'romantic' and the 'utilitarian'. The romantic view of security, which is primarily suited to major powers, emphasises prestige, *rayonnement* and global role.

Closely associated with the traditionalist view of security, the romantic interpretation asserts that security should be viewed in broader terms than just people's homeland or their territories beyond the seas, but should also include respect for the people and the maintenance of their economic interests.[54]

The utilitarian approach stresses the primacy of economic welfare and interdependence. From this view, security is deemed less in terms of threats to physical violation of territorial integrity of the country, but more in terms of threats caused by disruptions in international economic activity. Individual security for citizens through proper social security policies pertaining, for instance, to health care and employment, are deemed superior to striving for protection from perceived or imagined threats to territorial defence. Therefore, Mangold's categories of interpretation can be viewed as contrasting approaches in terms of prioritisation between 'high politics' and 'low politics' where the former deals with the protection of the state and the latter the protection of the individual.

Thus, these views on the interpretation of security are well represented in Brown's definition of national security as shown above. This definition incorporates aspects of both high and low politics and has elements of a strategic and economic view. It is also worth noting that despite the change in the notion of national security, the military remains significant. This stems from the uncertainty as to what extent will, for instance, conflicts related to environmental or economic issues lead to armed conflict?[55] While it is admitted that not all conflicts pertaining to the use of bio-physical space lead to violence, the mere potential could warrant considering the use of force as an option to defend non-renewable and vital resources like water.

The preceding discussion on national security shows beyond doubt the complexity of issues that are embedded within this area of security. The various definitions provided by Buzan and other analysts attempt to deconstruct the concept of national security. However, according to Mutimer[56], they all, almost without exception, suffer from two fundamental flaws. First, according to these analyses, the state remains the primary referent object where the latter refers to that entity which has to be secured. On the one hand Buzan acknowledges the role of the state in providing security but, on the other hand, he rejects the primacy of the state in security provision because it also has the capacity and, in some cases, the propensity to threaten it. This state-centricism in the analysis of national security is further confounded

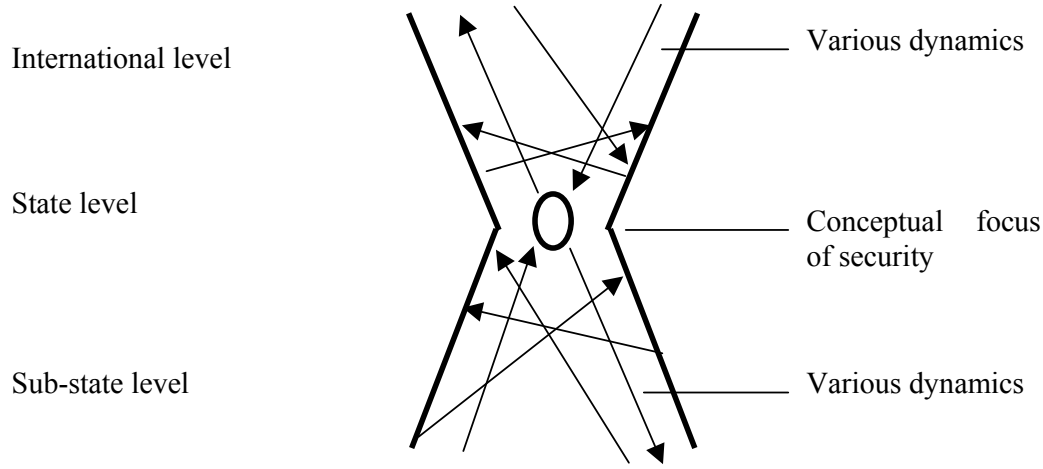
by adjectivising security with 'national' — providing 'national security'. The addition of 'national' to security euphemistically implies government responsibility, thus implicitly excluding other potential role-players.

Second, the analyses of national security by Buzan and other analysts acknowledge the fact that states are constantly interacting in an anarchical environment that is highly unpredictable. Arguments are advanced that security comprises various dimensions or sectors — ranging from the military to the economics and the environment. However, the unpredictable nature of the international system and the lack of mutual trust among states imply an eternal and intrinsic possibility of use of force. Consequently this places military security in a privileged position when compared to other forms or sectors of security. Unlike in weak, dysfunctional or collapsed states, military security remains the responsibility of the state in strong states. Under these circumstances the state 'securitises' all issues, thus requiring special measures to deal with them. It is worth noting that this situation dominated the strategic and national security thinking of even strong democratic states such as the US during the Cold War era. For instance, the US introduced the Freedom of Information Act, which was just as restrictive in terms of security information as the Protection of Information Act (1982) of South Africa during the apartheid era. The state assumes the sole right and responsibility to determine the nexus between the relevant issue and security which makes the role of the state in national security unassailable.[57]

4.2 FOCUS OF NATIONAL SECURITY: INTERNAL AND EXTERNAL DIMENSIONS

The national security policy of a country normally has both internal (domestic) and external (international) dimensions. Wæver's 'hourglass' model of security illustrates this point (Figure 1).

Figure 1: WÆVER'S 'HOURGLASS' MODEL OF SECURITY



Source: Buzan, B. 1991. ***People, States and Fear: An Agenda for International Security in the Post-Cold War Era,*** Second Edition. London: Harvester Wheatsheaf, p. 329.

The focus of national security policies varies from country to country (that is from government to government) and it is very much the function of the dynamics within government and the latter's view of world politics. If the internal political system is not stable enough, such policies will tend to be inward-looking, while external factors will play a role to the extent that an 'internal connection' could be established. Authoritarian, illegitimate and, in most cases, military regimes adopt this approach to national security. In the 1970s and early 1980s, countries such as Argentina, Brazil and South Africa fell in this category. A country that still has an unresolved conflict with a neighbouring state to the point that war is a constant probability, adopts an outward-looking view of national security. An arms race normally characterises such conditions. India and Pakistan could be a case in point. States located in a geographically unstable region in which neighbouring states are involved in war or there are still unresolved conflicts, will tend to have a balanced emphasis on both the internal and external dimensions of national security (most countries in the Middle East would fit this description). In most cases, especially in the latter case, there is no clear distinction between the internal and external dimensions as these are interwoven in a complex web that is mutually reinforcing with a view to providing 'complete' national security. The mythical assumption that national security is supposed to be people-centred and inward-orientated seems to be dispelled or invalidated by the concept of 'human security'.

Unlike other analysts such as Barry Buzan, Morten Kelstrup and Pierre Lemaitre who, together with Wæver belong to what has now become known as the 'Copenhagen School of Security Studies', which seeks to broaden the concept of security, Wæver views 'society' as the main referent object of security.[58] As illustrated in the 'Hourglass Model' (Figure 1), Wæver places the 'human race' in the centre of all efforts aimed at ensuring security. This is in line with the post-Cold War thinking on human security, that is people first, then state second in the priority list of security concerns. From Wæver's point of view, it could be argued that the quest for international security has to be premised on the centrality of the people in the state's security dialogue.

There is a notable difference in the traditional perception of national security between the developed and developing world. While the developed countries are grappling with issues such as nuclear non-proliferation and global security, Third World countries would still be dealing with basic issues of survival such as food, poverty, nation-building, health and trade. This, according to Ayoob[59], demonstrates the Third World's lack of integration with the systemic security agenda. As most Third World countries are creations of the European colonial powers, and their national borders are therefore artificial, they spend a disproportionate amount of resources on nation-building, which includes dealing with ethnic and religious divisions. The lack of national cohesion is compounded by the non-coincidence of the state and the nation, resulting in internal conflicts spilling over to the regional neighbours. While these conflicts are not necessarily a unique feature of developing countries, they are pronounced in such countries because of the lack of resources to deal with most of them.[60] The Wæver model is equally applicable to developing countries in that conflicts in such countries have an equal potential of escalation to involve regional and international role-players for their resolution.[61]

One of the positive developments engendered by the post-Cold War security arena was the adoption of the concept of human security by both the Global North (developed countries) and the Global South (developing countries). It became the common currency and ultimate goal in international affairs. However, the understanding of the concept of human security is also still clouded by many factors including its conceptual parameters, its relevance to national security and the feasibility of its attainment.

4.3 HUMAN SECURITY

The question was posed earlier on as to who the beneficiaries are of security? The human being as an irreducible unit in the international system would logically be at the core of all human endeavours, including the pursuit of security. It was further indicated that the original *raison d'être* for states and governments was the protection of citizens. Viewed from this perspective, governments become the agents of the citizens and the former's activities should primarily be in service of the latter. The conflictive nature of international relations up to the last decade of the twentieth century could be attributed to the fact that states or nations assumed that they would be able to ensure the security of their citizens through the preservation of their territorial frontiers. Security of people was perceived as a by-product of a state's territorial security, that is state first, and then people. However, this scenario has changed dramatically as people-centred approaches to security — hence 'human security' — characterise most agendas of liberal democratic states. This is aptly illustrated by the assertion that security should be viewed in a holistic manner, namely both vertically (between states) and horizontally (within states).[62] On the horizontal plane, the attainment of security (which includes military security) should be premised on factors such as political democracy, human rights, socio-economic development and environmental sustainability. On the vertical plane, security should recognise the supremacy and centrality of people as the main referent object of security.[63] There appears to be an intrinsic tension between the horizontal and vertical dimensions of security. States tend to address security concerns among themselves as though such concerns are separate from what happens from within.[64]

According to the 1994 Human Development Report of the United Nations Development Programme (UNDP), 'human security' can be defined as "the sense that people are free from worries, not merely from the dread of a cataclysmic world event but primarily about daily life."[65] The fundamental philosophy of human security is that if states could pursue people-centred policies (including those pertaining to safety from chronic threats such as hunger, disease, repression, and protection from sudden and hurtful disruption in the patterns of daily life), the aggregate effect would be a totality of security for all humanity. Unlike national security which seeks to protect the interests of people within national territories, the focus of human security is much broader than the confines of national territoriality, encompassing the

total human race. Thus, human security cannot be viewed as a process, but an ideal to which states aspire and has to be pursued at global level. It impacts both on domestic and foreign policies, and therefore requires a concerted effort to harmonise both national and international programmes in a manner that individually and collectively benefits directly (and not implicitly) all humanity. This approach requires 'de-nationalisation' of issues and harmonisation of policies across territorial boundaries. The ideal of human security should not be viewed as an abdication by states of their primary responsibility of protecting national interests, but an answer to the question: What is in the interest of the people irrespective of their nationality and territorial boundaries within the context of a global village that is unfolding?

The quest for human security presupposes the existence of a stable and democratic political system within states, an acceptable level of economic development and rule of law. Regrettably, this is not always the case, especially in the Third World countries. Global South states are generally weak and vulnerable to a host of threats. Measured against Buzan's major components of state, namely, the state idea, the physical base of the state and the institutions of the state, Global South states do not score very high compared to their Global North counterparts. The state idea for Global South states is hampered by the artificial and arbitrary boundaries which divide people regardless of ethnic or consanguineous affinities. The colonisation — and later decolonisation — processes created states without nations and, in some cases, with many nations. Small states do not have a sufficient physical base for survival, while large states cannot exercise adequate bureaucratic control over the whole territory. Government institutions are often poorly developed, largely due to lack of national cohesion, corruption and also armed anti-government forces. National security inherently implies that security sought by the government is for the whole nation. With most countries in the Global South still struggling with issues of nation-building, it follows that their national security concerns are largely domestic in nature. Fighting insurgents, combating terrorism, strengthening law enforcement agencies and ensuring the physical survival of the population remain high priorities for such countries.[66] Thus, the perception of threats, or at least the significance of particular threats to national security in the Global South, differs from the Global North.

This discussion leaves no clear-cut answer as to whether or not the state should remain a primary referent object of security. There is an apparent tension between what is perceived to be national security and individual security issues. This tension stems from the reality that some of the very instruments of state which the latter claims to be providing security could be deemed by individuals as a main cause of their insecurity. For instance, in 1981 the Americans wanted to place some cruise missiles at Berkshire, Britain. A number of protesters encamped at what was to be called the Greenham Common Peace Camp and called initially for the removal of cruise missiles at Berkshire, and later expanded their agenda to include anti-nuclear weapons protests. Unlike the British government which saw the addition of cruise missiles to its inventory as enhancing the security of the country and its citizens, the protesters viewed such missiles as being the main source of their insecurity. Consequently, the cruise missiles were removed.[67] In the same vein, environmental issues could pose a threat to security, but it does not follow that all environmental matters or phenomena are security issues. For instance, environmental degradation or changes to the biosphere due to subterranean nuclear testing could pose a serious threat to human health or well-being. Thus, this only becomes a security issue, not so much because of the resultant disruptions to human activity, but because of the actual damage to the environment.[68] Based on these arguments, it could be posited that national security should be viewed both from the actor's and practice's points of view. The actor's view would emphasise the role played by the state in pursuing security-enhancing strategies or restricting actions by other potential security-threatening role-players. The practice perspective looks at the dynamics of events that lead to threats to security. In both cases, the state remains a primary referent object but with diluted powers and expectations as espoused by the traditionalists.

4.4. THREATS TO NATIONAL SECURITY

The elasticity of the concept of security and national security, in particular, implies a concomitant broadening of threat perception. During the Cold War the architects of national security policy displayed a common fixation with military developments in hostile states or on the opposite side of the East-West ideological divide. This had an immense impact on defence spending and precipitated arms races, thus creating security dilemmas for many states. However, with the demise of the former Soviet Union, the threat scenario changed. Security policy had to shift its focus to other forms of threats. For many states, but especially those in the Global North, security threats were redefined to refer to those "forces originating

from outside … that can harm … lives, property, or well-being. These forces include military aggression, political subversion, economic instability, and environmental destruction."[69] While emphasising that there is a distinction between threats and vulnerabilities, Buzan admits that threats are difficult to deal with because of their perceptual nature. It is also not easy to determine if all threats constitute a national security issue as threats may range "from trivial to routine, through serious but routine, to drastic but unprecedented."[70] Misjudgement of the immensity and urgency of a security threat could engender paranoia, waste limited national resources, generate aggressive defence policies, and create a disruptive domestic political climate. It is against this background that Buzan identifies some criteria to be used in determining if a threat could affect national security. These include the specificity of its identity (such as the nuclear stand-off between the US and former Soviet Union); its nearness in space and time (such as the uneasy relationship between India and Pakistan); the probability of its occurring (for instance, the ever-present threat of reducing oil supply by the Organisation of Petroleum Exporting Countries — OPEC — in order to manipulate the oil price); the weight of its consequences; and whether or not perceptions of the threat are amplified by historical circumstances (such as Rwandese fear of the repetition of the 1994 genocide). Thus, the more intense a threat, the more likely it is that it may affect national security. However, these are difficult to identify, quantify and predict with absolute certainty.[71] For instance, it is undeniably true that as over-population, deforestation, nuclear disasters and the competition for resources increase, tensions between states are bound to increase. This does not necessarily imply that these issues qualify as threats to national security. A case-by-case approach could be applied as was the case when Israel went to war against Syria in 1967 following the latter's attempt to divert the flow of water off the Jordan River.[72] Thus threats could be placed on a continuum on a sector-by-sector basis. Such sectors primarily include the following: military, political, economic and environmental threats.

4.4.1 Military threats

This type of threat represents the core of threat perception in the classic view of national security. It is predicated on the fear that another state or group of states could use military force to subjugate the incumbent government or to replace it with another one favoured by the aggressor(s). It is believed that the only means to counter military action is by military force.

This necessitates a disproportionate allocation of resources to enable the state to deal with coercive tendencies of other states. The immediate effect of this situation is an exponential rise in defence expenditure and possibly erosion of the socio-economic well-being of ordinary citizens. Approaches to military threats could indicate the propensity of political elites to exploit the national sense of vulnerability and insecurity for their own political survival. Military threats vary in terms of level (for example, harassment of fishing boats; territorial seizures, blockade and full-scale invasion) and objective (minor and specific, and major and general).[73] Traditionally, the main protagonists with regard to military threats were states. The new actors now include terrorists, drug cartels and international crime syndicates who command sizeable arsenals. These actors usually have an agenda that transcends national borders. These new role-players in some cases enjoy the support, *albeit* covert, of recognised states, thus making it difficult to deal with them.[74]

4.4.2 Political threats

Some of the key functions of the state include establishing and maintaining national identity; providing an organising ideology; and creating institutions that reflect these both internally and externally. The successful execution of government duties depends largely on the ability to function as a state, in other words exercising bureaucratic control over the entire territory of the state. This is the function of a closely-knit political fabric of the state. Political threats are normally aimed at tearing this fabric through such activities as fomenting secessionism; unconstitutional changes of government; and undermining government authority.[75] Factors such as ethnicity, religion and irredentism could also be exploited in this process. Perpetrators of this threat could range from insurgents inside the country to covert operations by another country. In the core of the political threat debate is the question of sovereignty. The ever-increasing numbers and roles of inter-governmental and international organisations threaten to erode national sovereignty as understood in the Westphalian sense. The existence of political threats weakens the country, thus exposing or making it even more vulnerable to military threats.[76]

4.4.3 Environmental threats

The threat posed by environmental factors to human survival was only recognised largely in the latter half of the twentieth century — giving rise to the notion of environmental security.

Environmental security is defined as that area of security that "concerns the maintenance of the local and the planetary biosphere as the essential support system on which all other human enterprises depend."[77] The biospheric aspects include the need for clean air and water, liveable temperatures, abundant agriculture, and varied plant and animal species. These could be threatened by phenomena such as global warming, ozone depletion and acid rain, thus causing nations to be unable to feed themselves. While populations are increasing at an alarming rate, the physical space on earth is shrinking. Over-population in many parts of the world has demonstrated the excessive strain that human beings can exert on the environment. In addition, new man-made environmental disasters such as nuclear accidents (for instance, the meltdown of the Chernobyl reactor), are a serious cause for concern. This is particularly worrisome as the proliferation of nuclear devices to state and non-state actors, who do not necessarily adhere to international regimes of nuclear control, implies a potential time bomb waiting to explode. Deforestation is another man-made environmental threat, as it denudes territories, thus killing plant and animal species some of which are crucial for food, energy, construction materials, pharmaceuticals, industrial chemicals and natural pest control.[78] As already indicated, it is crucial to limit the elasticity in interpreting security, especially with regard to the environment. The mere existence of a negative environmental phenomenon does not automatically qualify as a security issue. Some analysts have concluded that at least if the link between environmental degradation and sustainable development is such that its impact could upset the natural balance both between and within generations, then probably the security aspect could become more salient. Therefore, the higher the potential severity and durability of the impact of man-made biospheric imbalance, the higher the chances that such an imbalance would be regarded as a security threat. However, there is still no unanimity on these conceptual interlinkages.[79]

4.4.4 Economic threats

The post-Cold War environment has catapulted economic security issues to the top of the pyramid in international relations. However, understanding exactly what constitutes economic security is still as elusive today as it was during the Cold War. Buzan[80] defines economic security as referring to "access to the resources, finance and markets necessary to sustain acceptable levels of welfare and state power." Neu[81] defines it as “the ability to protect or to advance [the country’s] economic interests in the face of events, developments, or actions that may threaten or block these interests.” It is true that increased commercial

interactions between states could generate wealth, thus alleviating poverty in the transacting countries — that is assuming that there is good governance and less fraud and corruption among state officials. It should be noted that increased economic competition could increasingly expose the country to various threats and vulnerabilities. For states, economic security means making efforts to ensure access to global markets, continuity of supply of essential resources and to buffer vulnerability to turbulent global market changes.[82] Meaningful participation in the global economy has become the ultimate objective of every state. This requires adapting domestic economic policies to be in line with the best-performing economies of the world; engaging partners on a bilateral basis; and participating in regional integration efforts in order to achieve economies of scale and to minimise the potential impact of negative global market behaviour.

Economic threats include all those activities that have the potential to disrupt the state's ability to ensure economic security. The origin of threats to economic interests could be exogenous or endogenous, accidental or intentional. These could be internally or externally induced. While externally-induced threats such as the Asian financial crisis of the late 1990s cannot be controlled by individual governments, internally-induced ones can. For instance, the over-commitment of a government's resources to counter perceived military threats or to project regional influence to remote geographic locations of the world, could hamper economic growth and erode citizens' standard of living. Paul Kennedy demonstrated this phenomenon for the US. This is particularly relevant for the Global South countries because they have a limited resource base and crippling debt repayments to make to the Global North.[83]

4.4.4.1. *Economic facets of national security*

Central to the quest for economic security is the desire to ensure that the standard of living in a country does not decline but improves continuously. The other crucial element in ensuring economic security is the ability to influence international role-players in defining the rules in a manner favourable to the country. Economic security seeks to achieve economic prosperity, namely, economic growth, relatively full employment of citizens, low inflation and high levels of investment. This cannot be achieved without relying on other countries for support in international forums and co-operation in providing or receiving certain commodities and services. There is a distinction between 'current economic prosperity' and 'future economic

prosperity'. While the former deals with the present standard of living and level of economic development, the latter concentrates on what could potentially be achieved in socio-economic terms. The quest for economic security could be in conflict with current economic prosperity as the latter is short-termist while the former is characterised by sustainability in the extended long-term.[84]

The Cold War fixation with military security has been eclipsed almost irreversibly by the ever-increasing significance of economic security. While in the past economic security was treated as an adjunct to military issues, the post-Cold War scenario is such that economic issues are viewed as "important political and broader architectural elements of both national security and the larger security order."[85] The US, for instance, wields massive military and economic power, but the latter power base is used much more frequently by manipulating the market forces.[86]

There is growing concurrence among analysts that with the recession of military threats to global security, the new threats are going to require global efforts to deal with them. If left unattended they could pose a threat much greater than that ever posed by military threats. Utagawa[87] suggests that there is a package of elements, namely, poverty, physical resource depletion/scarcity, and population, that are interacting in various combinations, thus forming a potent threat to global security. Like other analysts, Utagawa argues that these elements on their own do not necessarily constitute a threat to national security, but any of their combinations does. This package represents a refinement of the Malthusian theory, or the so-called 'limits to growth' hypothesis, which asserts that there is a trade-off between economic development and environmental quality. These threats to national security necessitate strategic co-operation among nations of the world across national and regional borders.

Thus, the fundamental questions regarding the nexus between economic issues and national security include the following:

a. To what extent should high technology exports be controlled by government? This arises from the possibility of being attacked with weapons based on own technology, as the Gulf War of 1990 amply demonstrated.[88]

b. To what extent could (or should) economic sanctions be used in the place of military strikes in order to achieve specific foreign policy objectives? Sanctions are known to affect both the imposing state and the target state.

c. Should the import of sensitive defence-related materials such as steel, machine tools and semiconductors be limited, even if supplied by allies? Reliance on imported defence materials exposes the country to a relationship of dependency which could threaten its national security in the long term.[89]

However, this nexus should not be construed as implying that the two varieties of security (economic and military) are mutually exclusive. Economic prosperity could be used to ensure military security. Conversely, military security could be used to engender economic security.

4.4.4.2. *Use of economic resources for military security*

There is an inextricable link between a country's economic power or access to massive economic resources and its ability to ensure military security. The geostrategic position (in economic terms) of a country enables it to command exclusive influence over commercial aspects that are also of military value. For instance, South Africa's Cape route is of great strategic value to other countries, especially when such choke points as the Suez Canal are blocked; it remains one of the most reliable routes for maritime traffic bound for destinations East and West. Added to this, South Africa's efficient maritime services, which include search-and-rescue, and onshore repair and refuelling services, make the route attractive even when there is no disruption in the choke points. However, an example of a critical link between economic and military issues augmented by geostrategic position, is that of landlocked countries *vis-à-vis* their neighbours. For instance, South Africa sealed off Lesotho's borders on many occasions between 1982 and 1985 in order to compel that country not to offer sanctuary to the anti-apartheid guerrilla forces, namely, the African National Congress' (ANC's) *uMkhonto weSizwe* (MK) and the Pan-Africanist Congress' (PAC's) Azanian People's Liberation Army (APLA). More than 90 per cent of supplies to Lesotho go through South Africa. Almost all electricity and oil requirements for Lesotho and some neighbours are routed through South Africa.[90]

The ability to command vast economic resources implies that there is at least a certain measure of current economic prosperity or an acceptable level of development. That enables a state to divert some resources to finance defence requirements, which include personnel, equipment and the capacity to venture into operations outside national borders.[91] In addition, economic prowess enables the country to influence its neighbours to implement multilateral punitive agreements such as economic sanctions, embargoes and even blockades. Thus economic instruments can be used as 'carrots' or 'sticks' in order to enhance the effectiveness of military instruments.[92] Like any other country, South Africa, for instance, used (and still continues to use) these combinations of military and economic instruments in pursuit of its national interests, especially in the regional context.

The sourcing of military equipment and/or accessories implies an economic relationship between the supplying country and the receiving country. Generally, political and economic relationships between the trading countries range from acceptable to good. The supplying states therefore have a leverage in terms of those specific items and can influence the military ability of the receiving state in many ways. These include delaying supplies, imposing stringent conditions on the use of weapons or accessories supplied, or even increasing prices in order to render maintenance difficult. The Lesotho example cited above amply demonstrates this vulnerability.

The use of economic power could also either provoke or prevent war. The negotiations at the end of WW I were focused on breaking the economic backbone of Germany. The rationale was that it was the economic power of Germany which enabled it to threaten peace on a massive scale. Thus the resultant Peace Treaty of Versailles left Germany with an astronomic US$33 billion reparations debt. Numerous analysts have concluded that it was that humiliation which enabled Adolf Hitler to rise to power on the altar of nationalism. Hitler undertook to undermine these humiliating debts and to recover all lost territories. In the process of imposing stringent punitive measures against Germany at the end of WW I, the West European countries also suffered through lost trade and other restrictions designed to keep Germany at bay. It was the same mentality that dominated the peace negotiations at the end of WW II. However, in order to ameliorate the negative impact of the double-edge sword of sanctions imposed on Germany, General Douglas MacArthur and other negotiators resolved to design and implement a Marshal Plan with a view to rebuilding the economies of Japan and Western Europe.[93]

4.4.4.3. *Use of military resources for economic security*

Economic considerations could also dominate when investing in military security. The central question in this regard is "To what extent will an investment in defence resources have economic spin-offs for the country?" The greater the spin-offs the greater the likelihood that defence expenditure could be increased. The decision to increase defence expenditure is not necessarily linked to the existence of a real or potential military threat. For instance, South Africa's decision in 1998 to procure an assortment of arms, aircraft and ships was largely based on the economic spin-offs that would be engendered. According to the estimates of November 1998 when the strategic defence packages were approved by the Cabinet, there were going to be about 64 000 jobs created and the country would gain from an Industrial Participation Programme (IPP) which was valued at about R110 billion.[94]

The role of the industrial-military complex in enhancing the economic well-being of a country becomes even more eminent when the defence resources are utilised in providing social services. The military have the capacity (troops, logistics, engineering, medical services, and the like) to perform specialised tasks such as airlifts, emergency assistance (search-and-rescue operations at sea), demining, and even nation-building (such as spectacular military shows during national events).[95] It is not uncommon for the country's military intelligence capability to be used for obtaining information to the benefit of the country's industries. This is particularly becoming more crucial as countries attempt to meaningfully integrate into the global economy. Thus, there is a well-established symbiotic relationship between military security and economic security. South Africa's attempts at strengthening ties with the Mercosur countries reflects this realisation that socio-economic security would accrue to the country by also engaging its trans-Atlantic neighbours.

The preceding discussion on threats demonstrates a clear link between threats to one state's national security and those of other states. Thus there are inextricable linkages between national security concerns of a state and global security. These linkages require international strategies or mechanisms in order to be able to manage them.

5. INTERNATIONAL AND REGIONAL SECURITY

One of the greatest challenges of the twentieth century has been the constant desire to ensure harmonious and peaceful inter-state relations with a view to preserving international security. Since the latter part of the nineteenth century, different approaches to the question of international (co-operative) security have been pursued. The central idea of international security is to create a sense of mutual interest in survival under all conditions, including nuclear deterrence, and that any potential or real adversary should be deterred from attacking out of self-interest.[96] These approaches varied from the 'balance-of-power' approach to the creation of supra-national bodies, to a combination of these approaches through alliance formations, which sometimes cut across traditional associations such as historical, cultural and geographic ties. However, the longest-lasting approach is that of the creation of supra-national bodies and the introduction of the concept of common security.

Common security could be regarded as a statement or pronouncement by states which recognises their mutual vulnerability to common or transnational threats.[97] In order to deal with threats to common security, states introduce mechanisms that include, but are not limited to, collective security arrangements and collective defence pacts. Both concepts — collective security and collective defence — are predicated on the existence or perception of the existence of a 'region'. Snyder defines a 'region' as "a set of states which are located in geographical proximity to one another."[98] This definition is particularly important for the analysis of the trans-Atlantic relations in the Southern Cone, namely South Africa's relations with the Mercosur countries, as the mass of water separating these countries ensures contiguity but not necessarily geographic proximity. It could be argued, for instance, that even though geographically South Africa shares the same continental land mass and tectonic plate with countries such as Angola and the Democratic Republic of Congo (DRC), and politically belongs to the same regional organisation (Southern African Development Community — SADC), in terms of other human security threats such as environmental degradation, nuclear hazards, illegal harvesting of marine resources and piracy inside and on the edges of South Africa's EEZ, there is a more viable regional security link with Argentina and Brazil than with many countries on the African continent.

Unlike the Concert of Europe, the League of Nations was the first supra-national body with a truly global mission of maintaining global peace with 'collective security' as the rallying force. The success of the League of Nations was viewed to be largely dependent on the political will and co-operation of individual member states and also the ability to underpin it with international economic institutions. The vision cherished by the drafters of the Covenant of the League of Nations, especially Woodrow Wilson, the US President, was to replace the balance-of-power approach with that of community-of-power. Through the latter concept they hoped to provide security and justice for all. With hindsight, the League of Nations seems to have collapsed under its own weight, as the political developments of the 1930s in Europe indicated. The critical weaknesses of the League of Nations were its assumption that a harmony of interests existed among states, and the French-led efforts to leave Germany a weak state. It failed to deal with Fascism and Nazism, and its failure culminated in the outbreak of WW II.[99]

Since the ideals of the League of Nations were deemed noble and its mistakes rectifiable, at the end of the WW II another supranational organisation — the UN — was established. The UN sought both to rectify the weaknesses of its predecessor, the League of Nations, and to introduce a new set of rules that would govern collective security. The main executive agency for this mission was to be the UN Security Council, comprising five permanent members, namely, Britain, the People's Republic of China, France, the former Soviet Union and the US. The various provisions of the UN Charter dealing with collective security — from Articles 39 to 51 — obligate member states to contribute towards the attainment of this global ideal.

5.1 COLLECTIVE SECURITY

The introduction of the concept of collective security represented a shift away from a competitive, self-help approach to security, to one which was premised on collaboration. For it to be implemented, it had to be concretised within an institutional framework which would not only devise, regulate and monitor rules and regulations of co-operation, but would also arbitrate in cases of conflict among members of the collective security structure. For this purpose, collective groupings such as the Concert of Europe, then the League of Nations and lastly, the UN, were established.

The genesis of 'collective security' can be traced back to the formation of the Concert of Europe in the nineteenth century, but its conceptual development started with the formation of the League of Nations at the end of WW I and, arguably, reached its 'maturity' both in political and academic circles only after WW II.[100] Like the other variants of security, there is no universal consensus on the definition of collective security. Premised on the principle that an attack on any member state is an attack on all states, collective security is broadly defined as "a method of managing the power relations of nation states through a partially centralized system of security arrangements. While the ultimate power remains diffused among independent sovereign states, authority in the specifically defined spheres of maintenance and enforcement of peace is vested in an international body."[101] It could also be defined as "an organisational arrangement whereby all states pledge themselves to come to the support of members needing assistance."[102] In simpler terms it could also be defined as "a system of world order in which aggression by any state will be met by a collective response from all."[103] It is crucial to note that all these definitions do not specify the level of involvement by individual states and the nature of resources pledged for such an eventuality.

The UN has a mottled record in terms of its achievement of its primary goal of ensuring international (collective) security. Much of its weakness can be attributed to the restrictions imposed by the bipolarity of the international system along the ideological divide led by the US and the former Soviet Union for the West and the East respectively. As was the case during the dying days of the League of Nations, national security became a dominant feature characterising the international system after WW II. However, with the demise of the Cold War, the UN system seemed to be rejuvenated and the concept of collective security was 'rehabilitated' in the wake of the Persian Gulf crisis in 1991. During that crisis there appeared to be unity in the purpose of ejecting Iraqi troops from Kuwait and enforcing the provisions of the UN Charter prohibiting states from using force as an instrument of foreign policy and for territorial acquisition, thus undermining the very concept of juridical statehood.[104]

Even during the pre-historic period, states strove to increase their individual security by creating conditions of insecurity for their neighbours. This left the neighbours no choice but to increase their security, which led to a zero-sum situation or the so-called 'security dilemma'. State security was viewed as an 'appraisive' concept in the sense that it signified

or accredited some kind of valued achievement. Using the sports analogy, Baldwin argues that states would compete, like sports teams playing for a championship, to achieve more security than other states.[105] As a concept, collective security re-assured states that narrow and self-centred approaches to security produced an opposite effect, namely, insecurity. Through collective security states realise that security could be made a 'common good' which has to be shared and that it is indivisible.[106]

The dominant factor in the collective security paradigm is the 'abstention' from the use or threat of use of force in settling disputes. This could be interpreted as almost equivalent to the cumulative effect of multiple non-aggression pacts that span across a defined region and where contiguity is not the dominant criterion. Collective security is a clear example of the neoliberal institutionalist approach to the analysis of security where there is an emphasis on the motives or forces driving state behaviour. In this regard, the neoliberal institutionalists argue that states make collective security arrangements by highlighting the significance of common interests which include common threats and "shared fears of unrestricted violence or unstable agreements, or insecurity about independence or sovereignty."[107]

Over the years it has proved both an onerous process and a daunting task for the UN to launch operations aimed at ensuring collective security. Consequently, a new generation of security organisations emerged in which regional and/or sub-regional organisations became more associated with the concept of collective security (see Figure 2). Among the most active of these sub-regional organisations are NATO (even though this is essentially a common defence arrangement); the SADC which, until the latter half of 2001, was paralysed by the lack of consensus on the operationalisation of the Organ on Politics, Defence and Security; and the Economic Community of West African States (ECOWAS). In this process the UN Security Council became an over-arching body responsible for issuing mandates for peace-support operations in order to legitimise them in the eyes of the international community. The UN Secretary General sends observers to represent the world body in peace missions, which include peace enforcement, peace-building and diplomatic initiatives in resolving and/or managing conflicts. The reasons behind the proliferation of sub-regional organisations, and the subsequent increase in their utilisation in regional peace missions, include the fact that such regional groupings are familiar with regional circumstances, they have affinity to states involved (they have a direct interest in the resolution of the conflict) and it is much cheaper. Through collective security structures states stand to share the benefits of peaceful symbiosis

and reciprocity. However, where there is a semblance of a clear-cut threat or enemy, collective security arrangements could be supplemented with collective defence pacts.

5.2 COLLECTIVE DEFENCE

The other variant of co-operative security is 'collective defence'. Unlike collective security, collective defence is much narrower in focus, aim and geographic extent. The primary objective of collective (mutual) defence is to protect allies against external aggression[108]. This has an inherent potential for exacerbating tensions rather than alleviating them. The signing of mutual defence pacts constitutes a balance-of-power and bloc-building approach which could potentially lead to the formation of other blocs or alliances — thus causing a 'security dilemma' on an inter-regional or inter-subregional level.[109] It may also be argued that a collective defence pact presupposes that the parties have undertaken not to be aggressively disposed towards one another, even in the absence of a signed non-aggression pact. While a collective security arrangement could include a collective defence component, both concepts are mutually exclusive but closely related in the sense that the latter enables the former to materialise. In this respect, through collective security, states undertake to refrain from using or threatening to use of force in settling disputes and also to collectively deal with any of its members which abrogate this rule.[110]

Collective defence partners would normally be like-minded in terms of their worldview, perception of threat or enemy, and would also be grappling with common or similar political issues. This like-mindedness is not only limited to military issues, but political exchange between partners also becomes easier. It could be argued that defence pacts are by nature an indication of a higher level of commitment by partners to come to the rescue of each other during a state of national defence.[111] Through such pacts member states emphatically and unambiguously demonstrate their willingness to sacrifice lives, national resources and political constituencies in defence or pursuit of another country's security objectives. Like collective security arrangements, collective defence requires harmonisation and co-ordination of defence policies, joint exercises and interoperability of defence equipment. However, unlike collective security, collective defence might engender a sense of insecurity among non-members of the pact in the region, thus precipitating an arms race.

As already indicated, collective defence is premised on the perception of common (military) threats. Its value lies in the collective capacity of member states to thwart foreign aggression by military force and to deter potential aggressors. However, this is not always possible, because partners should possess sufficient combined military strength to make such pact a formidable partnership. For instance, if South Africa was hypothetically aggressively disposed towards countries constituting the Indian Ocean Island Group (Comores Islands, Madagascar, Mauritius, Réunion and Seychelles), it is highly unlikely that their combined military strength would be sufficient to deter aggressive intent. It is against this background that most collective defence arrangements tend to be asymmetrical. That is, one or more states should be prepared to shoulder disproportionate burdens while tolerating free-riding by some of its partners.[112] This was particularly prevalent during the Cold War era when the two leading collective defence organisations, NATO and the Warsaw Pact — led respectively by the US and the former Soviet Union — were aggressively disposed towards each other.[113]

Asymmetry and level of commitment distinguish one defence pact from the other. The level of commitment is the function of the nature and gravity of the security threat as perceived by the major powers that would be prepared to enter into an asymmetrical partnership. There are numerous such cases where the US has entered into collective defence agreements with countries that have a limited level of commitment. Examples include the ANZUS Treaty (Australia, New Zealand and the United States) and the US-Japan Mutual Security Treaty (MST). In terms of both agreements, the US is supposed to consult the Japanese, Australians or New Zealanders "if any party considers that its territorial integrity or security is under threat and to act to meet such a threat in accordance with constitutional processes."[114] Both agreements do not specify what type of action should be taken under what circumstances. However, it is apparent that states involved in both agreements are not obligated to assist the US militarily should it get involved in war but the reverse is not true, because the US is supposed to come to the rescue of the signatories in case the latter are attacked or threatened with force.[115]

One of the longest surviving and most effective examples of a collective defence pact is NATO. The North Atlantic Treaty (4 April 1949) provides clear and unambiguous *casus foederis* or 'hair-trigger clause' (the situation in which mutual commitments are to become operational). Article 5 of the North Atlantic Treaty states:

> "The Parties agree that an armed attack against one or more of them in Europe or North America shall be considered an attack against them all; and consequently they agree that, if such an armed attack occurs, each of them, in exercising their right of individual or collective self-defence recognised by Article 51 of the Charter of the United Nations, will assist the Party or Parties so attacked by taking forthwith, individually and in concert with the other Parties, such action as it deems necessary, including the use of armed forces, to restore and maintain the security of the North Atlantic area."[116]

In Africa there are currently three examples of collective defence on a multilateral basis, namely ECOWAS, the *Accord de Non-Aggression et d'Assistance en Matière de Défence* (ANAD), and the Pact of Four which comprises Angola, the Democratic Republic of Congo, Namibia and Zimbabwe. ANAD which was concluded in June 1977 by Burkina Faso, Mali, Mauritania, Niger, Senegal, Côte d'Ivoire and Togo, with Benin and Guinea having observer status at ANAD meetings, does not have any prominence in the continent when compared with ECOWAS. ANAD was created in 1977 by the Francophone countries with the assistance of France as a security arm of the economic integration organisation called *Communaute Economique L'Africa de l'quest* (CEAO) which came into existence in 1971. The ANAD Protocol of Application was adopted in 1981 but the institutional framework of ANAD was already functional by then.[117] The establishment of CEAO was aimed at ensuring a balance of power in the sub-region and countering Nigeria's dominance. Originally designed and signed as a non-aggression pact and later upgraded to a mutual defence pact, ANAD has maintained a low profile for a long period of time, but is currently broadening its scope and agenda beyond mere narrow defence issues to incorporate such issues as economic development, population migration, and so forth.[118]

In 1974 Nigeria, together with Togo, established ECOWAS which embraced the Anglophone, Francophone and Lusophone countries in the sub-region.[119] Unlike ANAD, ECOWAS has played a prominent role in the resolution of conflicts in the region. Examples of its involvement in peacekeeping and peace enforcement include Liberia and Sierra Leone. Like ANAD, ECOWAS was originally established on the basis of a Non-Aggression Pact signed in Lagos on 22 April 1978; and three years later (on 29 May 1981) a Mutual Defence Pact was signed in Freetown. In terms of Articles 1 and 2 of the Non-Aggression Pact, ECOWAS member states undertook to firstly refrain from "the threat or use of force or aggression," and

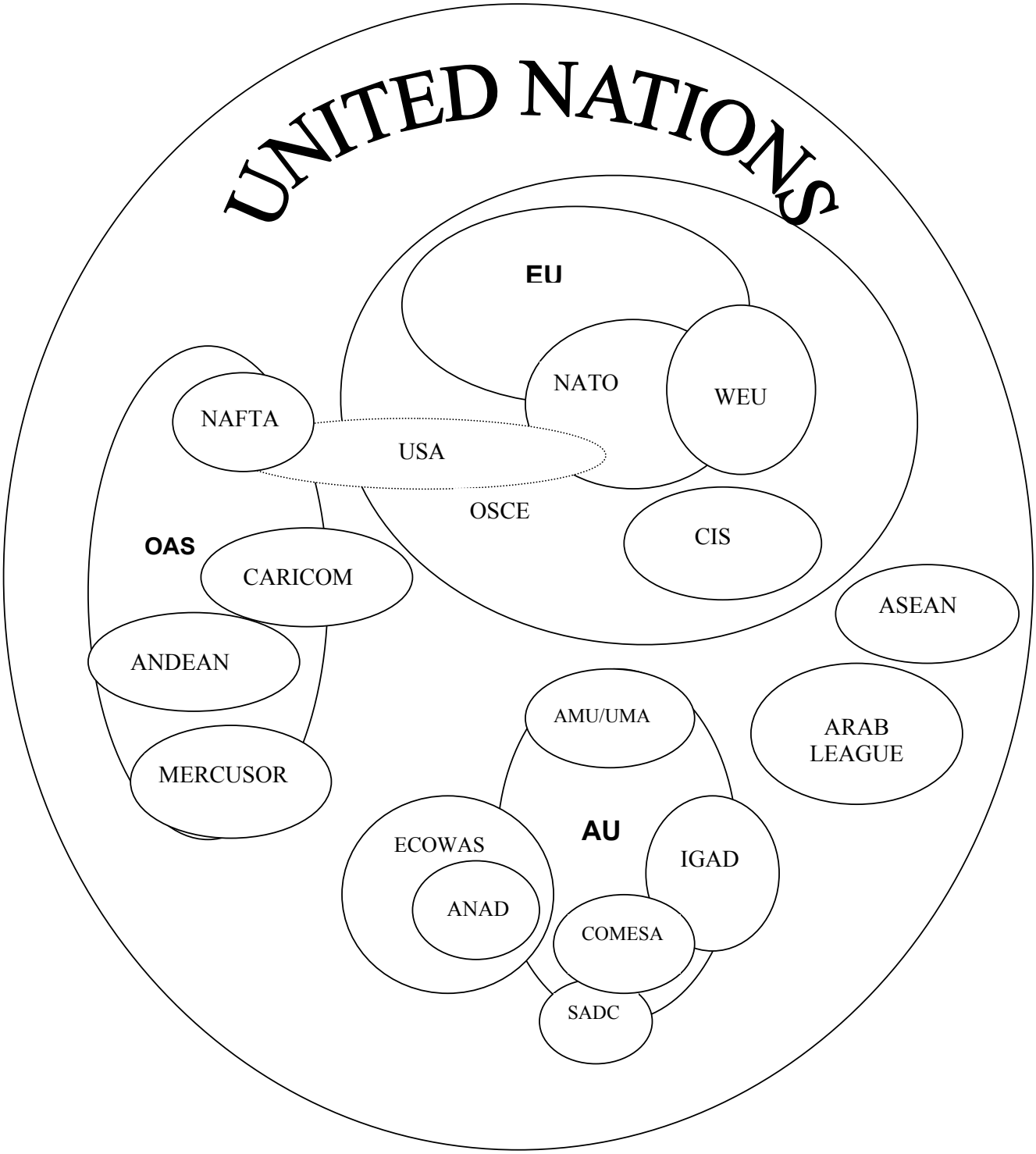
secondly from "committing or condoning acts of subversion, hostility or aggression against the territorial integrity or political independence of the other member states."[120] Through the defence pact member states declared that "any armed threat or aggression directed against any Member State shall constitute a threat or aggression against the entire Community" (Article 2), and they further resolved "to give mutual aid and assistance for defence against any armed threat or aggression" (Article 3).[121] Despite limited resources and lack of common ideological background, ECOWAS has proved to be a formidable African equivalent of NATO.

Further south in Africa, SADC is still grappling with the modalities of a possible Mutual Defence Pact as envisaged in its SADC Organ Protocol on Politics, Defence and Security. The agreement on the institutional structure and framework for the SADC Organ was only reached on 14 August 2001.[122] However, it is not clear how the clause on a Mutual Defence Pact will be implemented, particularly because a limited collective defence alliance within the SADC's collective security structure already exists. On 8 April 1999, Angola, the DRC, Namibia and Zimbabwe signed an agreement in terms of which member states pledged to support one another in case of threat or use of force against any of the parties. The danger in the Pact of Four is the fact that it allows 'unilateral and collective action', which threatens to bring about a schism within SADC. While the SADC Treaty prohibits states from entering into bilateral and multilateral agreements that could be contrary to the ideals of the Treaty (Article 24), it subscribes to the UN Charter's provision for the individual state's right to self-defence, which could include defence alliance formation. It could be argued that the finalisation of the Organ Protocol in 2001 and the concurrent negotiations for a mutual defence pact may result in the current Pact of Four being used as a model and the latter subsumed into the former. However, the provision that "an attack on one is an attack to all" might be diluted, if not totally omitted. The number and the geographic extent of countries constituting SADC are such that they preclude the feasibility of such a provision. It might be diluted by introducing a graduated approach which escalates as the conflict situation deteriorates. A graduated approach would include exhausting all peaceful means before resorting to the use of force under the conditions as might be determined by the UN Security Council and the African Union.

Figure 2 provides a schematic representation of the regional and sub-regional organisations within the UN collective security system. Most of these organisations were established with a

view to improving economic relations among member states. However, in due course, they incorporated security aspects.

Figure 2: THE UNITED NATIONS AND REGIONAL ORGANISATIONS WITH SECURITY DIMENSIONS [123]



KEY:

- AMU/UMA: Arab Maghreb Union
- ANAD: *Accord de Non Aggression et d' Assistance en Matiere de Defence*
- ASEAN: Association of South-East Asian Nations
- AU: African Union (This replaced the Organisation for African Unity — OAU)
- CARICOM: Caribbean Community and Common Market
- CIS: Commonwealth of Independent States
- ECOWAS: Economic Community of West African States
- IGAD: Inter-Governmental Authority on Development
- MERCOSUR: *Mercado Común del Sur* (Southern Cone Common Market)
- NATO: North Atlantic Treaty Organisation
- OAS: Organisation of American States
- OSCE: Organisation for Security and Co-operation in Europe
- SADC: Southern African Development Community
- WEU: Western European Union

5.3 CONCERT SECURITY

The signing of the Pact of Four Accord within the SADC structure, demonstrates the difficulty of ensuring constant security guarantees especially against military threats. The decision-making process within a large collective security framework is onerous, cumbersome and unpredictable. The smaller the number of countries that constitute a security arrangement, the quicker and more responsive that organisation becomes. This is the basic argument of the concert security theory. In addition to the question of the number of the parties involved, power and level of exposure to threats are just as important for a concert security arrangement to function effectively. Unlike collective defence and collective security mechanisms, concerts are not obliged by a formal commitment to thwart aggression, but instead rely primarily on informal negotiation to resolve disputes or crises.[124] It could be argued that the now-defunct Front-Line States (FLS), led by Zimbabwean President Robert Mugabe, operated along the lines of a concert, even though its achievements in respect of its initial objectives are dubious.

However, for concerts to be effective, additional criteria apply. These are, firstly, that each member state should be vulnerable to collective action. Phrased differently, states in the system should not possess such excessive power — military, political and economic — that any combination of other states would still not pose a serious threat to it. The post-Napoleonic Europe was characterised by the dominance of Britain, France, Prussia, Austria-Hungary and Russia, all of whom constituted what was known as the Concert of Europe. Together these states determined rules and norms by which all other states in the European international system had to abide. The post-Cold War era has a single superpower left — the US — but it too is vulnerable to nuclear weapons possessed by even smaller states which have limited military and economic resources.[125]

The second dimension to any successful concert security arrangement is that major states have to accept the existing international order. This leaves no room for revisionism on the part of the major powers. During the period following the Napoleonic Wars up to 1848, revolutions in Europe were inspired by dissatisfied states which wanted to challenge the international order, but all to no avail. The post-Cold War era is marked by both a general acceptance of the current international order and the challenge posed by countries such as Russia and the People's Republic of China (PRC). The final dimension of the concert system

requires that the political elites of the major powers should refrain from destructive competition and self-interest, and embrace the concept of an international community which has to be defended by all for all to exist.[126]

In addition to the variants of international security such as collective security, collective defence and concert security, alternative approaches include *common security, comprehensive security* and *co-operative security*. These will be briefly discussed.

5.4 COMMON SECURITY

The concept of common security was first used and defined comprehensively in 1982 by the Independent Commission on Disarmament and Security Issues which was commonly known as the Palme Commission — named after the Swedish Prime Minister, Olof Palme, who chaired the commission. According to the Palme Commission, the recognition of the concept of common security was a viable alternative to the bipolar international system based on a security system that had a mutually destructive capability. This recognition stemmed from the understanding that the unilateral self-help security system was rendered obsolete and inappropriate by nuclear weapons which, when used, would result in immeasurable mutual damage. Through common security the Palme Commission sought to rid the world of the arms race and nuclear weapons and introduce far-reaching arms control and disarmament programmes.[127]

While common security was not perceived as prescribing abdication from the national right to self-defence as provided by the UN Charter, it suggested non-provocative defence. The concept of non-provocative defence requires that states should develop military forces that are purely designed for defensive purposes as opposed to offensive ones. Thus, weapon systems should be limited to those that would be sufficient for defensive purposes, but would not have long-range offensive capability. This essentially calls for static defence, where the use of mines, tank traps, fixed fortifications and the deployment of conventional forces on the border are crucial.[128]

The notion of common security as construed by the Palme Commission has plausible ideals, but it is also based on a false premise that modern technology can neatly distinguish between

offensive and defensive capabilities. Most countries' military doctrine on defence requires the capability to launch hot-pursuits and to repel the enemy away from the national borders in order to cripple its destructive potential at safe distances. Thus weapons perceived to be for defence purposes, could be utilised for offensive purposes as well. This does not reduce, but exacerbates, the security dilemma.

5.5 COMPREHENSIVE AND CO-OPERATIVE SECURITY

The various forms of security at international level have focused largely on the military dimension. With the broadening of the concept of security to include non-military aspects such as socio-economic development, environment and politics, security has become more comprehensive — hence comprehensive security. To achieve comprehensive security, as argued by its proponents, states have to incorporate all aspects that could threaten their well-being. Such aspects would include access to and/or control of natural resources, the protection of trade routes and the side-effects of exporting sensitive dual-use technology to 'rogue' states.[129]

The apparent limitations of the notion of comprehensive security are complemented by the introduction of co-operative security, which seeks to impress upon states the importance of gradually changing the attitudes of policy-makers towards security. Unlike the comprehensive security notion, the co-operative security view does not prescribe structural changes to the international system, *albeit* at regional level, but seeks to mould state behaviour through influencing the political elite. Both notions expand the understanding of security to include non-military issues, and they both emphasise the significance of co-operation rather than competition. The co-operative security approach, which is largely based on a regional system, promotes "consultation rather than confrontation, reassurance rather than deterrence, transparency rather than secrecy, prevention rather than correction, and interdependence rather than unilateralism."[130] For these to materialise, various confidence- and security-building measures (CSBMs) are introduced. These CSBMs include joint training exercises, demilitarisation of common borders, exchange programmes of military personnel and weapon acquisition programmes.

The Organisation for Security and Co-operation in Europe (OSCE) represents a good example of co-operative security. Comprising 54 states, the OSCE co-operative security framework is based on the non-hegemonic behaviour of all member states and the adherence to the principles of mutual accountability, transparency and confidence at both domestic and foreign policy levels. While the OSCE does not have legal status under international law, its decisions are binding politically but not legally. It also has an institutional structure just like any other international organisation. It has undertaken numerous missions in Eurasia which include: Caucasus (Georgia), Eastern Europe (Moldova, Ukraine), the Baltic States (Estonia, Latvia), Chechnya (assistance group), Belarus (advisory and monitoring group), Central-Asia (Tadjikistan, Khazakstan, Turkmenistan, Kirgisistan), Naorno-Karabakh and in South East Europe. The biggest missions are in the Balkans, namely in Kosovo, Bosnia and Herzegovina and Croatia. The OSCE also provides for military co-operation by promoting openness and transparency on issues of arms control, CSBMs and military-to-military contacts. The implementation of the Dayton Accord which stabilised the security situation in Bosnia is under the auspices of the OSCE.[131] In terms of the 1992 Helsinki Summit the OSCE received the mandate to launch peace support operations if there is a conflict within or among the member states.

Analysing the security system of Europe, Kolodziej and Lepingwell[132] identified six institutional approaches to the collaborative security system being pursued by the European states in partnership with their North American counterparts. These approaches have now been adopted by other regions, *albeit* with varying degrees of success. They are: security community; hegemonic alliance *cum* consensual leadership; concert of states of big powers; concert of states based on spheres of influence *cum* hegemonic coercive; and multiple variants of balance-of-power arrangements, based on the countervailing military capabilities of real or perceived rivals. The notion of security community applies in the sense as coined, defined and conceptualised by Karl Deutsch.

The hegemonic alliance *cum* consensual leadership is based on co-operation among states where one state plays a leadership role and enjoys the general support of all in the alliance. The typical example is the role played by the US, not only in terms of leadership within NATO, but also in the balancing of power in Western Europe. This is in stark contrast with the concert of states on spheres of influence *cum* hegemonic coercive scenario. In the latter case, states that fall in the area of influence of a powerful neighbour are forced to comply with

the security requirements of the regional hegemonic power. The former Soviet Union, which was locked in an ideological struggle during the Cold War, coerced its neighbours to co-operate with Moscow and to become members of the Warsaw Pact. The origins of the concerts of states with a view to dealing with a superior military power can be traced back to the early 1700s when states in Europe joined forces to counter Louis XIV's designs that would see Spain and France, together with their respective overseas territories, being combined to form an incontestably powerful Bourbon. They also did the same with Napoleon in 1813 when they defeated his plans to create a gigantic state controlled from Paris.[133]

The paralysing effect of the Cold War distorted regional perspectives on security and obscured opportunities as it promoted perceptions of insecurity. The post-Cold War scenarios of collective security seem much more promising than ever before. The main centrifugal forces are: economic interdependence, technology diffusion, the global audience and the emerging shared values. These forces facilitate the codification of rules governing international relations in which global peace and security would be the common goal. As shown in Figure 2, major regional countries, especially in East Asia — notably Japan and the People's Republic of China — which have not joined regional groupings, are collaborating on security issues, as in the Association of South-East Asian Nations (ASEAN).[134]

6. GLOBAL SECURITY

Security arrangements between states within the framework of international security, both at bilateral and multilateral levels, seem to have an inherent weakness of further polarising states along the fault-lines of alliances, blocs and allegiances. Thus, instead of generating peace, regional security agreements have a built-in negative potential for neutralising, rather than totally eliminating existing animosities among states. These agreements seem to bring about a relative absence of war - a condition which does not translate into the existence of eternal peace. Through (sub-)regional security structures states still fall short of peace efforts with a global perspective, in other words where individual state and regional efforts are geared towards global security, which Haftendorn[135] defines as "a system of world order or security." She further states that global security presupposes "a universal concept of security with a shared set of norms, principles, and practices which result in common patterns of international behaviour."[136] Since global security is more than just the cumulative effect of regional efforts

at achieving peace, but is rather a re-engineering of the systemic forces controlling the international system, it is crucial that global role-players — major economic and military powers, transnational commercial entities and supranational organisations such as the UN, should be decisive and their activities geared towards achieving global rather than parochial interests.[137]

The rudimentary initiatives aimed at ensuring global security dates back to the international treaties such as those of Westphalia (1648), Vienna (1918), Versailles (1919) and San Francisco (1945). These peace efforts were premised on the assumptions, that if nations could accept the right of co-existence with their neighbours and lived in harmony and peace, then security would be global. With the demise of the Cold War and the introduction by former US President, George Bush, of the concept of a New World Order (NWO), a paradigm shift occurred. The NWO posited that politically stable and economically prosperous states tend to be peaceful. If states are peaceful, the net gain will be international peace and security. Thus, developmental aid to bolster democratic processes world-wide is viewed as an important instrument to help poorer countries contribute to this collective goal – global security.[138]

The UN agenda regarding global security seems to be chequered and unstructured. Being the only organisation in the world mandated to bring about global peace, the UN approaches threats to peace by using a number of international instruments within the international security framework which includes its multiple structures and (sub-)regional organisations. Since global security is not only the cumulative effect of a peaceful, stable and prosperous international system, but also an ideal state against which the UN's performance should be measured, it could be argued that only phenomena with possible global consequences should enjoy priority. Viewed in this manner, therefore, issues such as fall-out from nuclear testing, debris in space and gross pollution in the seaways are construed as threats to global security. In addition to that, talks on nuclear disarmament, nuclear non-proliferation, a global ban of land-mine stockpiles and conventional arms transfers, especially to rogue states, dominate the global security agenda.[139] When global security prevails, states would be able to dedicate the bulk, if not all, of their time and resources to improving the quality of life of their citizenry within the context of human security.

7. THE SECURITY PYRAMID

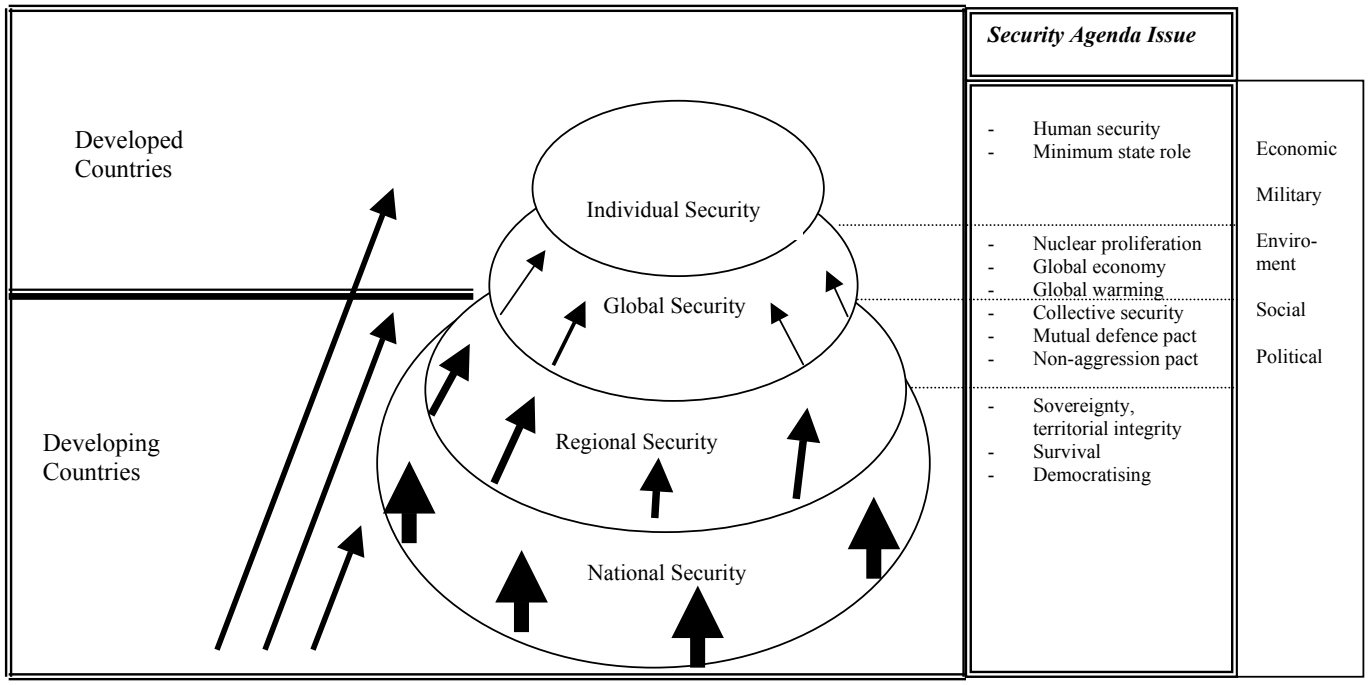
The variants of security have demonstrated linkages in a complex web that defies clear distinction from one another. Notwithstanding such complexity, this web can be dismantled and explained from one constant perspective: the *ultimate goal* of individual and collective state action. This ultimate goal explains, at least partially, why states would go to great lengths to pursue a particular course of action and not others. The resources (finance, personnel, time, infrastructure, equipment, etc.) dedicated to achieving a particular goal provide an indication of the general orientation of that state's ultimate goal, especially when it pertains to security. To what extent can the ultimate goals of weak and strong states, states ruled by military dictators and those ruled by elected liberal-democratic representatives be the same? The answer is obviously: highly unlikely. It also follows that states still experiencing serious internal political instability (civil wars, armed insurrection, etc) would, for instance, be less inclined to subscribe to and implement all international human rights instruments, but would possibly welcome those instruments dealing with, for example terrorism and banditry. In the same vein, developing countries would not pursue higher order human security issues such as combating global warming and environmental degradation, as vigorously as developed countries. This paradox could be explained partially by the *Security Pyramid* (Figure 3).

The 'Security Pyramid' identifies four levels of security: *national security, regional security, global security and individual security*. It seeks to explain the logical progression of states in terms of their security priorities in relation to their level of economic development and the maturity of the political system within and between states.

National security: States that have just acquired their independence or that are facing serious internal challenges to political power, will dedicate much of their effort to security issues (especially state or regime security aspects). Since national security has both internal and external dimensions as discussed above, a government would identify the origin of threats and appropriately tailor its national security policy to counter such threats. Argentina's 'National Security Doctrine' of the 1970s and South Africa's 'Total Strategy' of the 1970s and 1980s are examples in this category, even though they both had a very strong outward-looking component. However, if the threat is exogenous (as in a border dispute or contested territorial claims), the government would seek to manipulate the national psyche to convince the

population that the physical existence of the state is under threat (for example Israel). The actions of such a state are likely to engender a sense of insecurity with its neighbours — the security dilemma — possibly leading to an arms race. Chile, for instance, projected itself as a 'nation under siege' primarily prior to and, less so, after independence. In the nineteenth century Chile had to contend with the machinations of Argentina and Peru, which were then the most powerful countries in South America. After independence Chile wanted to establish its dominance over the whole of South America's Pacific coast.[140] Thus as a general rule, states tend to first secure alliances at bilateral and multilateral levels. These are evident in the thickness of the arrows in the 'Security Pyramid' as states seek alliances with a national security perspective. These arrows become thinner as the nature and ultimate goal of international interaction change (see Figure 3). Concepts likely to dominate the national political and security lexicon would include: national territory, national sovereignty, non-interference, self-sufficiency (autarky), and offensive-defensive military posture.

Figure 3: THE SECURITY PYRAMID



Regional security: Countries focussing on national security soon realise that an adequate sense of security cannot be obtained without the co-operation of other states or their neighbours. To this effect they conclude bilateral and multilateral agreements where security is viewed as an indivisible component of international relations — hence international security or (sub-) regional security, thus making the latter the next level in the pyramid. The arrows at this level are the thickest as states attempt to secure partnerships and alliances. Such agreements do not necessarily have to be concluded with neighbours. Factors favouring such agreements include vulnerability to similar or common threats; geographic proximity and contiguity (for example most states in SADC); the status of each state in the international system (for example states with a *pariah* status); convergence and compatibility of political values; and sharing vital natural resources such as water — as is the case with the Tigris and Euphrates rivers in the Gulf, and the Nile river running through Egypt and Ethiopia.[141] But the other conditions for ensuring common security at international level include the political cohesion of states, the nature of their military policy and their transparency to observation by others.[142] Concluding international security or (sub-)regional arrangements provides the states that are still preoccupied with national security issues with a cushion to attempt to prevent external support to internal rebels or elements causing instability. Emanating from these agreements would be regional or sub-regional organisations such as ASEAN, NATO, Mercosur, SADC, etc. Common concepts at this level of the pyramid are: collective security; collective (mutual) defence; non-aggression pacts; and confidence- and-security-building measures. It should be noted that some states conclude bilateral and multilateral agreements, not with a view to dealing with internal instability, but largely to maintain good neighbourliness. As can be seen in the 'Security Pyramid', it is argued that most of the developing countries are still locked in the struggle for national security and have not gone beyond the regional security level.

Global security: After having concluded various bilateral and multilateral agreements within the regional security framework, states then attempt to establish co-operation among the clusters or groupings. For instance, SADC is currently at various stages of success in its attempts to secure co-operation with (sub-)regional organisations such as ECOWAS, Mercosur and the European Union (EU). The collective effect of interaction across geographic and organisational affiliations would bring about security at a global level or 'global security'. The quest for common security at a global level seeks to generate co-

operation among the nations of the world to strive to ensure harmonious relations and interaction among states, and to encourage such states to pursue economic, political, military, environmental and other policies that would not render the earth uninhabitable. Phenomena such as global warming, proliferation of weapons of mass destruction, deforestation and other forms of environmental degradation threaten all of humanity. For instance, the quest for global security has resulted in large areas being declared nuclear-free zones such as the whole of Africa (through the Pelindaba Treaty) and the South Atlantic region (declared Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic — ZPCSA).

Individual security: Having achieved consensus within and among themselves on issues that could affect the human race, states remain the major but not the only referent objects of security and focus will be biased in favour of human beings/individuals. This level, which represents the apex of human endeavour in human security, can only be achieved by states which are relatively stable and mature liberal democracies with sufficient resources to credibly pursue agendas such as those pertaining to global warming, depletion of the ozone layer and deforestation. Most of these states with such capacity are in the Global North (see Figure 3). While the developing countries (Global South) have to be sensitised about the primacy of the individual human beings within the international state system, the existing circumstances in those states are such that they require inestimable resources to address them. It has to be impressed upon them that regime security cannot, and should not, be pursued at the expense of individual security. States should be viewed as the means and not the ends of security.[143] This represents a fundamental departure from the Cold War era dichotomies of East-West and North-South tensions. While the East-West dichotomy depicted peace that entailed a defensive-offensive posture, in which deterrence and compellance defined the bottom line of coexistence between two power blocs, the North-South dichotomy concluded that the key to security was economic development.

The post-Cold War human security paradigm combines military security with development and replaces the old zero-sum perspective with a negative-score-game perspective that recognises "possibilities for winning together and losing together."[144] The relevance and role of the state is perceived to be generally that of a facilitator and an enabler (and not necessarily a guarantor) of security, while new issues and non-state actors play a significant role in defining the collective understanding of security. However, in order to avoid the debate

which pits the state against human security or where the advocates of human security perceive the state as the single most important impediment towards the achievement of human security, an alternative view of human security is advanced. This view distinguishes between "human security as an 'integrative concept' dealing with people as opposed to 'territorial or military security' which is defined as a 'defensive concept'. In other words the focus is on security between people, as opposed to security only between states."[145]

As idealistic as the human security paradigm is, its adherents and advocates have become more vocal and enjoy more recognition in political decision-making processes than ever before the demise of the Cold War era. This is evident in the manner in which state security instruments such as the national defence forces are deployed in the name of either preventing human catastrophes or improving the quality of life of the people.[146] It is therefore clear that while the state has not been relegated into obscurity in terms of security definitions, the security parameters and role-players (not necessarily decision-makers) have been vastly expanded. As will be demonstrated in the next chapter, the quest for human security requires co-operation across the whole spectrum of security issues, including socio-economic security.

8. CONCLUSION

This chapter firstly focused on the various forms of co-operation among states and secondly on the etymology of security. Co-operation among states on a wide variety of issues has characterised the international system throughout the twentieth century. This was despite bloc-formation strategies which generated political and ideological animosities along the East-West divide. The need for co-operation was in most cases based on the realisation that unilateral and autarkic approaches to socio-economic and security issues were counter-productive. Notwithstanding the strains imposed by the Cold War, multilateral arrangements helped stabilise the international system and also established, with varying levels of acceptability, the ground rules for state-to-state interaction. To this end, states agreed on international standards, obligations, allocations and prohibitions.

Security was identified in this chapter as a contested concept whose meaning has developed over time to a stage where its conceptual parameters have become blurred and indefinite. This not only poses a challenge to scholars (who have to unpack and demystify the concept), but also to policy-makers (who have to formulate security policies) and the policy-

implementers (who have to execute such policies). The concept of security has developed beyond its traditional association with military activity to include issues such as economic development, environmental degradation and the well-being of citizens. Furthermore, security is no longer viewed only in terms of protecting and defending national territory, but has expanded to include security concerns of neighbouring states and the whole world.

The Hobbesian view of the primary role of the state being to ensure security for its nationals, leaves doubt as to whether or not modern states can fulfil this role despite the phenomenal expansion of security. The notion that states should react swiftly to security threats presupposes sufficient resources, and that the state's security and individual security are on the same conceptual plane. National security can no longer be the domain of the state alone. However, individual security is in practice still subservient to national security. International security, which is premised on the removal or reduction of mutual suspicion among states, requires continuous inter-state co-operation. This accounts for the general increase in the efforts to strengthen international collective security structures, and confidence- and security-building measures. While security based on (sub-)regional structures does not necessarily imply universal security or global security, it contributes towards making the quest for global security a possible eventuality. It has also become apparent that, only if states place human beings — the global citizen — at the centre of all security efforts, rather than state entities, will real human security be achieved.

Human security, as a concept, is still evolving and therefore its main building blocks are not yet clear. However, there is general consensus that it links development with state security where the latter is associated with the role of the national security forces. The perceived synergy that is expected from the human security debate has resulted in a number of 'side-effects', which include the threat of possible marginalisation or reduced role of the state organs and the demand by the national security forces for additional resources in order to deal with development issues as proposed in the human security paradigm. The basis for South Africa's relations with the Mercosur countries is rooted largely in this paradigm. This becomes evident in the nature and focus of activities involving South Africa and these countries.

The next chapter traces the historical development and the rationale for the formation of the Mercosur group. The latter aspect is particularly important especially when a comparative analysis is made between the development of Mercosur and sub-regional groups such as SADC. The concept of 'open regionalism' is also explored in relation to Mercosur with a view to establishing, whether, if at all, it has contributed to the success of Mercosur. The organs of Mercosur and their functions are also described. The analysis of the Mercosur organs provides a basis for the areas or mechanisms through which extra-regional states and other sub-regional groups such as SADC can co-operate with Mercosur.

REFERENCES AND NOTES

[1] Muir, R. 1981. ***Modern Political Geography, Second Edition***. London: The Macmillan Press Ltd, p.82.

[2] This group is called *Mercosur* in Spanish and *Mercosul* in Portuguese. To avoid having to use both acronyms all the time, the Spanish variation will be used in deference to its common usage, while recognising the dominance and influence of the Federative Republic of Brazil in the region.

[3] Kegley, C.W. & Wittkopf, E.R. 1997. ***World Politics: Trends and Transformation***, Sixth Edition. New York: St. Martin's Press, p. 130.

[4] Mittelman, J. and Falk, R. "Global Hegemony and Regionalism", in Calleya, S.C. (ed.) 2000. ***Regionalism in the Post-Cold War World***. Aldershot: Ashgate, p. 4.

[5] Holsti, K.J. 1992. ***International Politics: A Framework for Analysis,*** Sixth Edition. London: Prentice-Hall (UK), p. 99.

[6] Kegley, C.W. & Wittkopf, E.R. 1997, *op cit.* p. 530.

[7] Deutsch, K., et. al. 1957. ***Political Community and the North Atlantic Area***. Princeton: Princeton University Press. See also Evans, G. and Newnham, J. 1990. ***The Dictionary of World Politics: A Reference Guide to Concepts, Ideas and Institutions.*** London: Harvester Wheatsheaf, and Holsti, K.J. 1992, *op cit.* p. 391.

[8] Holsti, K.J. 1992, *op cit*. p. 382.

[9] *Ibid.* pp. 383-389.

[10] *Ibid.* p. 385.

[11] ***Nuclear Non-Proliferation Treaty*** originally signed by Britain, USA and the USSR on 1 July 1968.

[12] ***Antarctic Treaty*** signed on 1 December 1959.

[13] Snyder, C.A. "Regional Security Structures", in Snyder, C.A. (ed.) 1999. ***Contemporary Security and Strategy***. London: Macmillan Press, pp. 103-105.

[14] Buzan, B. 1991. ***People, States and Fear: An Agenda for International Security in the Post-Cold War Era,*** Second Edition. London: Harvester Wheatsheaf, p. 16.

[15] Baldwin, D.A. 1997. "The Concept of Security." ***Review of International Studies***, Vol. 23, No. 1, pp. 7-8.

[16] *Ibid.* pp. 6-7.

[17] Rothschild, E. 1995. "What is Security?" ***Doedelus***, Vol. 124, No. 3, pp. 57-60.

[18] *Ibid*. pp. 57-60.

[19] Mangold, P. 1990. ***National Security and International Relations***. London: Routledge, p. 4.

[20] *Ibid.*

[21] Bellay, I. 1981. "Towards a Theory of International Security". ***Political Studies***, Vol. 29, No. 1, p. 102.

[22] Buzan, B. 1991. *op cit.* p. 17.

[23] *Ibid.*

[24] *Ibid.*

[25] *Ibid.*.

[26] Fischer, D. 1993. ***Nonmilitary Aspects of Security: A Systems Approach***. Aldershot: United Nations Institute for Disarmament Research, p. 10.

[27] Gill, P. 1994. ***Policing Politics: Security Intelligence and the Liberal Democratic State***. London: Frank Cass, p. 93

[28] Kriegler, J. (ed.) 1993. ***The Oxford Companion to Politics of the World***. Oxford: Oxford University Press, pp. 820-821. See also Gill, P. 1994, *op cit*. p. 93.

[29] *Ibid.* pp. 820-821.

[30] Mangold, P. 1990, *op cit.* p. 1.

[31] Romm, J.J. 1993, *op cit.* p. 4.

[32] Wallander, C.A. "Soviet Policy Toward the Third World in the 1990s", in Weiss, T.G. and Kessler, M.A. (eds.) 1991. ***Third World Security in the Post-Cold War Era***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers, pp. 36-37. See also MacFarlane, S.N. "The Impact of Superpower Collaboration on the Third World", in Weiss, T. G. and Kessler, M.A. (eds.) 1991. *op cit.*. pp. 135-141.

[33] Haftendorn, H. 1991. "The Security Puzzle: Theory-Building and Discipline-Building in International Security." ***International Studies Quarterly,*** 35, March, p. 3.

[34] *Ibid.*

[35] The USA White House. 1997. ***A National Security Strategy for a New Century,*** May, p. 5.

[36] *Ibid.*.

[37] Buzan, B. 1991, *op cit.* p. 35.

[38] Mangold, P. 1990, *op cit.* pp. 1-2.

[39] Nkiwane, S.M. 1993. ***Regional Security and Confidence-Building Processes: Southern Africa in the 1990s***. New York: United Nations, p. 4.

[40] Romm, J.J. 1993, *op cit.* p. 2. See also Mangold, P. 1990, *op cit.* p. 2, and Haftendorn, H. 1991, *op cit.* p. 3.

[41] Hartland-Thunberg, P. "National Economic Security: Interdependence and Vulnerability", in Alting von Geusau, F.A.M. and Pelkmans, J. (eds.) 1982. ***National Economic Security***. Tilburg: John F. Kennedy Institute, p. 50.

[42] Buzan, B. 1991, *op cit.* p. 16.

[43] Barber, W.E. "National Security Policy", in Louw, M.H.H. (ed.) 1978. ***National Security: A Modern Approach***. Pretoria: Institute for Strategic Studies, p. 35.

[44] Romm, J.J. 1993, *op cit.* pp. 5-6.

[45] *Ibid.*

[46] Brown, H. 1983. ***Thinking About National Security: Defense and Foreign Policy in a Dangerous World***. Colorado: Westview Press, p. 4.

[47] Garnett, J.C. 1989. "National Security and Threat Perception". ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol XI, No. 2, p. 1.

[48] Al-Mashat, A.M.M. 1985. ***National Security in the Third World***. London: Westview Press, p. 19.

[49] Baldwin, D.A. 1997, *op cit*. pp. 13-14, 18-20.

[50] Holsti, K.J. 1992, *op cit.* p. 84.

[51] Romm, J.J. 1993, *op cit.* p. 4.

[52] Mangold, P. 1990, *op cit.* p. 3.

[53] *Ibid*. pp. 4-6.

[54] *Ibid.* p. 4.

[55] Romm, J.J. 1993, *op cit*. pp. 1, 15.

[56] Mutimer, D. "Beyond Strategy: Critical Thinking and the New Security Studies", in Snyder, C.A. (ed.) 1999, *op cit.* p. 81.

[57] *Ibid.* pp. 80-81, 89.

[58] *Ibid.* pp. 80, 84.

[59] Ayoob, M. 1995. ***The Third World Security Predicament: State Making, Regional Conflict, and the International System***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers, p. 7.

[60] Sayigh, Y. 1990. "Confronting the 1990s: Security in the Developing Countries." ***Adelphi Papers, No. 251***, p. 60.

[61] Thomas, C. 1987. ***In Search of Security: The Third World in International Politics.*** Boulder: Rienner, pp. 10-12.

[62] Halliday, F. 1994. ***Rethinking International Relations***. London: Macmillan Press, p. 143.

[63] Booth, K. 1994. "A Security Regime in Southern Africa: Theoretical Considerations." ***Southern African Perspectives: A Working Paper Series***, No. 30, p. 3.

[64] Halliday, F. 1994, *op cit.* pp. 143-144.

[65] United Nations Development Programme (UNDP). 1994. ***Human Development Report***, p.23.

[66] Buzan, B. 1991, *op cit*. pp. 96-107. See also Ayoob, M. *op cit.* pp. 34-35; 47-49.

[67] Mutimer, D. *op cit.* pp. 86-87.

[68] *Ibid.* p. 87.

[69] Shuman, M.H. and Harvey, H. 1993. ***Security Without War: A Post-Cold War Foreign Policy***. Oxford: Westview Press, pp. 25-26.

[70] Buzan, B. 1991, *op cit.* pp. 113-115.

[71] *Ibid.* pp. 134-137.

[72] *Ibid*. p. 37.

[73] *Ibid*. pp. 117-118.

[74] Shuman, M.H. and Harvey, H, *op cit.* pp. 27-29.

[75] Buzan, B. 1991, *op cit.* pp. 118-122.

[76] Shuman, M.H. and Harvey, H, *op cit.* pp. 31-33.

[77] Buzan, B. 1991, *op cit.* pp. 19-20.

[78] Shuman, M.H. and Harvey, H, *op cit.* pp. 35-37.

[79] Mutimer, D. *op cit,* pp. 87-88.

[80] Buzan, B. 1991, *op cit.* p. 19.

[81] Neu, C.R. and Wolf, C. 1994. ***Economic Dimensions of Security***. Santa Monica: RAND, pp. 11-12.

[82] Buzan, B. 1991. *op cit.* pp. 237-242.

[83] Shuman, M.H. and Harvey, H, *op cit.* pp. 33,35.

[84] Neu, C.R. and Wolf, C. *op cit.* p. 12.

[85] Sperling, J. and Kirchner, E. 1998. "Economic Security and the Problem of Cooperation in post-Cold War Europe." ***Review of International Studies***, Vol. 24, No.2, p. 221.

[86] Hufbauer, G.C. and Elliott, K.A. "The International Economy with a National Security Perspective", in Blechman, B.M. and Luttwak, E.N. (eds.) 1987. ***Global Security: A Review of Strategic and Economic Issues***. London: Westview Press, p. 91.

[87] Utagawa, R. "Unconventional Security Threats: An Economist's View", in Taylor, R. and Sato, S. (eds.) 1995. ***Future Sources of Global Conflict***, Volume IV. London: Royal Institute of International Affairs, pp. 25-29.

[88] Sandler, T. and Hartley, K. 1995. ***The Economics of Defense***. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, p. 3.

[89] Hufbauer, G.C. and Elliott, K.A., *op cit.* pp. 91-92.

[90] Mills, G. "Lesotho: Between Independence and Incorporation", in Benjamin, L. and Gregory, C. (eds.) 1992. ***Southern Africa at the Crossroads? Prospects for Stability and Development in the 1990s***. Rivonia: Justified Press, pp. 64-65.

[91] Hufbauer, G.C. and Elliott, K.A., *op cit,* p. 104.

[92] Neu, C.R. and Wolf, C., *op cit,* pp. xix –xx.

[93] Shuman, M.H. and Harvey, H. *op cit*. p. 123.

[94] South African Department of Defence. ***Bulletin***, 19 November 1998.

[95] Neu, C.R. and Wolf, C. *op cit,* p. xix.

[96] Haftendorn, H. 1991, *op cit.* p. 7.

[97] Nkiwane, S.M. 1993, *op cit.* p. 5. See also Butfoy, A. 1997. ***Common and Strategic Reform: A Critical Analysis***. London: Macmillan, pp. 91, 99.

[98] Snyder, C.A, *op cit.* p. 102.

[99] Haftendorn, H. 1991, *op cit*. p. 7.

[100] Mangold, P. 1990, *op cit.* pp. 7, 84.

[101] Hough, M. 1998. "Collective Security and its Variants: A Conceptual Analysis with Specific Reference to SADC and ECOWAS." ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol. XX, No. 2, p. 24.

[102] Nkiwane, S.M. 1993, *op cit.* p. 5.

[103] Kegley, C.W. & Wittkopf, E.R, *op cit.* p. 530.

[104] Norton, A.R. "The Security Legacy of the 1980s in the Third World", in Weiss, T.G. and Kessler, M.A. (eds.) 1991, *op cit*. p. 22.

[105] Baldwin, D.A. 1997, *op cit.* p. 10.

[106] Mangold, P. 1990, *op cit.* pp. 85-86. See also Booth, K. 1994. *op cit.* p. 11.

[107] Snyder, C.A, *op cit*, p. 107.

[108] Hough, M. 1998, *op cit.* p. 26.

[109] Cawthra, G. 1997. "Prospects for Common Security in Southern Africa", in Cawthra, G. & Møller, B. (eds.) 1997. ***Defensive Restructuring of the Armed Forces in Southern Africa***. Sydney: Ashgate, p. 153.

[110] Malan, M. 1999. "The OAU and African Subregional Organisations – A Closer Look at the 'Peace Pyramid'." ***ISS Papers***, Paper 36, January, p. 2.

[111] Snyder, C.A, *op cit.* p. 105.

[112] 'Free-riders' are defined as "those who enjoy the benefits of collective goods but pay little or nothing for them." Kegley, C.W. and Wittkopf, E.R., *op cit.* p. 532.

[113] Snyder, C.A., *op cit.* p. 106.

[114] *Ibid.*

[115] Holsti, K.J., *op cit.* p. 90.

[116] NATO Office of Information and Press. 1995. ***NATO Handbook***. Brussels: NATO Office of Information and Press, p. 232.

[117] Akinrinade, S. 2001. "Sub-Regional Co-operation in West Africa: The ECOWAS Mechanism for Conflict Management in Perspective." ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol. XXIII, No.1, May, p. 4.

[118] Malan, M. 1999, *op cit.* pp. 2,12.

[119] Yoroms, J.G. 1999. "Mechanisms for Conflict Management in ECOWAS." ***The African Centre for the Constructive Resolution of Disputes (ACCORD)***, Number 8, p. 2.

[120] ECOWAS: Article 1 and Article 2 of the ***Protocol on Non-Aggression*** signed in Lagos on 22 April 1978.

[121] ECOWAS: Article 2 and Article 3 of the ***Protocol Relating to Mutual Assistance on Defence*** signed in Freetown on 29 May 1981.

[122] SADC: ***Protocol on the Southern African Community Development (SADC) Organ for Politics, Defence and Security***, Gaberone, Botswana, 28 June 1996. The objective of concluding a Mutual Defence Pact was retained even after the review process of the Organ Protocol which was conducted at the ministerial meeting held in Mbabane on 26-27 November 1999, thus signalling a clear commitment towards attaining that eventuality.

[123] It should be noted that many of these organisations, including the Organisation of African Unity (OAU), were initially designed primarily for political and socio-economic co-operation, and not for collective security. However, with time they incorporated this function as an integral part of their founding charters. Besides, the UN Charter (Chapter VIII) bestows powers of maintaining peace and security on such regional organisations provided that authorisation is obtained from the UN Security Council. In the case of the OAU, it could be argued that it became a collective security organisation after the Cairo Declaration (30 June 1993) which established the OAU's Mechanism for Conflict Prevention, Management and Resolution. In this regard, see Malan, M. 1999. *op cit.* p. 2. See also Sayigh, Y. 1990. o*p cit.* p. 66.

[124] Snyder, C.A., *op cit.* pp. 109-110.

[125] *Ibid.* p. 110.

[126] *Ibid.*

[127] *Ibid.* p. 111.

[128] *Ibid.* p. 112.

[129] *Ibid.* p. 113.

[130] *Ibid.* p. 114.

[131] Gæger, N. 1999. "Security Organisations in Europe - Lessons Learned from the European Experience." ***The African Centre for Constructive Resolution of Disputes (ACCORD) Occasional Paper***, Durban, Number 7, pp. 3-5.

[132] Kolodziej, E.A. and Lepingwell, J.W.R. 1997. "Reconstructing European Security: Cutting NATO Enlargement Down to Size." ***Contemporary Security Policy***, Vol. 18, No. 1, p. 3.

[133] Holsti, K.J. 1992, *op cit.* p. 69.

[134] Blechman, B.M. "International Peace and Security in the Twenty-First Century", in Booth, K. (ed.) 1998. ***Statecraft and Security: The Cold War and Beyond***. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, p. 295.

[135] Haftendorn, H. 1991, *op cit.* p. 9.

[136] *Ibid*.

[137] Vale, P. "New Trends in Global Security: Some Questions from the South". ***Paper presented to the International Working Group on America's Task in a Changed World in Washington***, October 1991.

[138] *Ibid*..

[139] Whittaker, D.J. 1995. ***United Nations in Action.*** London: UCL Press, p. 230.

[140] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. 1989. ***Strategy in the Southern Oceans: A South American View***. London: Pinter Publishers, p. 11.

[141] Buzan, B. 1997. "Regions and Regionalism in Global Perspective", in Cawthra, G. & Møller, B. (eds.) *op cit*. p. 26. See also Solomon, H. 1996. "Water Security in Southern Africa", in Solomon, H. (ed.) ***Sink or Swim: Water, Resource and State Co-operation***. IDP Monograph Series, No. 6, October, p. 2.

[142] Buzan, B. "Is International Security Possible?", in Booth, K. 1991. (ed.) ***New Thinking About Strategy and International Security***. London: Harper Collins Academic, p. 45.

[143] Booth, K. 1994, *op cit.* p. 53. See also Booth, K. "War, Security and Strategy: Towards a Doctrine for Stable Peace", in Booth, K. (ed.) 1991, *op cit.* pp. 339-341.

[144] Nef, J. 1999. ***Human Security and Mutual Vulnerability: The Global Political Economy of Development and Underdevelopment***, Second Edition. Johannesburg: International Development Research Centre, p. 23.

[145] Mutschler, C. "Human Security in the Southern African Context – Concepts and Challenges", in Mutschler, C. and Reyneke, E. (eds.) 1999. ***Human Security in the Southern African Context: Proceedings of the Pugwash Symposium, 7-10 June 1998***, ***Midrand South Africa***. Pretoria: Pugwash South Africa, p. 5

[146] Nef, J. *op cit.* p. 22.

CHAPTER TWO

THE HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT AND STRUCTURE OF MERCOSUR

1. INTRODUCTION

The advent of the globalisation phenomenon and its requisite reliance on information technology, necessitates that states and non-state entities, particularly the transnational corporations (TNCs), structure themselves in a manner that facilitates meaningful participation. Globalisation is primarily based on the inter-connectedness and interdependence of national economies. Being driven by information technology and telecommunications, it thrives on an open economy system. There is hardly any part of the globe that is unreachable and therefore financial capital and services can be moved and rendered almost in real time, irrespective of geographic constraints. Thus its proponents insist on trade liberalisation and removal of all protectionist measures which include tariff barriers, manipulation of national currencies, subsidies and so forth. This presents opportunities as much as it does dangers. States could gain from new markets, thus earning foreign currency. Increased foreign currency earnings enable states both to diversify into new products and/or expand production, thus providing more job opportunities. Collectively, these contribute towards the economic growth of a country and eventual improvement in the lifestyles and well-being of people. From a security perspective such conditions are ideal, as people whose basic needs of survival are satisfied do not readily pose any security threat to the incumbent government or existing political system.

However, globalisation could also be detrimental. Small and emerging economies can easily become subsumed and even submerged by bigger and stronger economies. Unfettered and unregulated market forces could wreak havoc on national economies in the form of high inflation; more environmental degradation; acutely inequitable distribution of wealth; and increased unemployment as new global actors engage in capital-intensive enterprises, thus driving out those economies relying on labour-intensive industries.[1] The shedding of jobs on a massive scale due to trade liberalisation and other policies could engender extensive protests and even the toppling of governments. The two main survival strategies in the globalisation phenomenon are, firstly, establishing sufficiently large entities or regional groupings to make

a tangible impact on a global scale and, secondly, gaining a competitive edge rather than comparative advantage as was the case during the greatest part of the Cold War era. These two aspects provided the impetus for the formation of Mercosur.

This chapter attempts to chart the historical development of Mercosur by briefly analysing some of the salient factors that contributed towards its establishment. The institutional structure, including the roles and functions of the Mercosur group, are also discussed. The performance of the group is then assessed in relation to its stated goals.

2. FACTORS NECESSITATING THE ESTABLISHMENT OF MERCOSUR

As in any attempt at analysing cause and effect or the linkages between the variables and the net effect, it is extremely difficult to pinpoint with definitive authority the driving forces that impelled the constituting members of Mercosur to form such a grouping. However, the following could be listed as possible justifications or impelling factors that contributed towards the establishment of Mercosur: *the military developmentalism doctrine; the proliferation of regional organisations in the world; conflict potential; the democratisation process; and, lastly, globalisation*.

2.1 MILITARY DEVELOPMENTALISM DOCTRINE

For a substantial period most South American countries were either under military rule or civilian rule with excessive military influence. For instance, in Paraguay the military have dominated national politics for more than 150 years. Unlike Paraguay, Colombia has had numerous successive civilian governments, except for six times since independence, but the military have continuously played excessive roles in national politics.[2] The military rulers realised that for them to achieve high military competency and to acquire technologically-advanced military equipment and hardware, they had to improve economic performance. They resolved that military developmentalism — a doctrine that the military should stay in power for as long as it requires to place the economy on a right footing — would be effective. Hence, Hirst[3] calls the military regimes of that time 'instrumental regimes' because they used economic growth as an instrument to stay in power. To this effect, they invited or co-opted civilian specialists to help design economic policies and strategies that reflected popular

thinking of that time. For instance, in Brazil, where this doctrine originated, the military regime in 1964 embarked on the policy of economic stabilisation which sought to reduce inflation and to restore investor confidence. Brazilian President Castello Branco appointed Roberto Campos de Oliveira, the former head of the National Bank of Economic Development, as Minister of the Economy. Campos, through the use of indexation, managed to repress public protests over austere economic measures introduced to improve economic performance. He also introduced a ten-point plan in terms of which such measures would be implemented. Having been a lecturer at the Escola Superior de Guerra, Brazil's most senior and influential military training institution, Campos was able to imbue certain economic policy values which were wholeheartedly accepted and adopted by the military establishment. This facilitated the acceptability of his appointment as head of economic affairs for a military government.[4]

Campos's policies did not survive for too long, as the head of government, President Casto e Silva, who came to power in 1967, appointed a new Minister of Finance, Antonio Delfim Neto. Delfim, who was to be in office until 1974, brought the Ministry of the Economy under his direct control, thus centralising economic policy making in his office. In 1968 the Fifth Institutional Act was enacted, which brought an end to political opposition, thus ushering in one of the most repressive periods in Brazilian political history. Ironically, this period coincided with impressive economic growth and Gross National Product (GNP), which at that stage stood at around 7 per cent. The military developmentalist strategies were adopted by Argentina in 1966, by Peru in 1968, by Chile and Uruguay in 1973, and again in Argentina in 1976. These strategies proved inadequate for dealing with external factors such as the oil shocks of 1973 and 1979.[5]

2.2 PROLIFERATION OF REGIONAL ORGANISATIONS

The initiation of integration talks and efforts in Western Europe spurred on other regions to consider similar ventures. On 9 May 1950, French Foreign Minister Robert Schuman proposed that Europe's coal and steel should be placed under a common European authority. Subsequently, on 18 April 1951, Belgium, France, Germany, Italy, Luxembourg and the Netherlands signed the Treaty creating the European Coal and Steel Community (ECSC). These events, together with the signing on 25 March 1957 of the Treaties creating the European Economic Community (EEC) and the European Atomic Energy Community

(Euratom), up to the signing on 7 February 1992 of the Treaty of Union and Final Act in Maastricht, demonstrated beyond doubt that developing states would not survive the economic might of the powers of the North, given the political, military and also economic resources at their disposal.[6] They had to follow suit.

For developing countries, the strategy was to attempt to devise ways of using their primary resource power to leverage against the exceedingly expensive manufactured products from the North. It was against this background that more regional organisations, especially from among developing countries, were established. First of these was the Latin American Free Trade Area (LAFTA)[7], also known by its Spanish acronym ALALC — *Asociación Latinoamericana de Libre Comercio,* which was established in 1960 with a view to fostering economic collaboration in the region. Its secretariat was situated in Montevideo, Uruguay. In the same year, a similar separate organisation called the Central American Common Market (CACM) was created, with its permanent secretariat in Guatemala City. However, the CACM disintegrated due to the eruption of war between El Salvador and Honduras in 1969. This war only ended in 1979 after eleven years of intense negotiations.[8]

Third of these was the Council of Arab Economic Unity (CAEU)[9] which was established in 1964. It sought to promote economic integration among Arab nations. Fourth was the establishment of the Association of South East Asian Nations (ASEAN)[10] in 1967. Its primary goals were to encourage regional economic, social and cultural co-operation among its members. Fifth was the formation of the Caribbean Community (CARICOM)[11] in 1973 which also wanted to promote economic development and integration. In 1975 ECOWAS[12] was established with a view to promoting economic co-operation. In the same year, an organisation called the Latin American Economic System (SELA) was established. Also designed to engender economic collaboration among regional states, it was specifically planned to exclude the United States and to include Cuba.[13]

Similarly, the Southern African Development Co-ordination Conference (SADCC)[14] was established in 1980 both to promote regional economic co-operation and to reduce dependence on South Africa. In 1981 the Latin American Integration Association (LAIA) — also known as ALADI — the Spanish acronym for *Asociación Latinoamericana de Integration,* was established to foster free regional trade.[15] The current efforts at regional co-

operation in South America are based on the solid foundation laid by the ALADI agreements — also known as the economic complementarity agreements. For instance, in December 1994, Chile and Mexico, and also Colombia and Venezuela, concluded an agreement on tariff reductions based on the ALADI provisions. The Mercosur common external structure is also largely influenced by the ALADI framework. In fact, both the Mercosur and the Andean Community are an integral part of ALADI.[16] Lastly, the South Asian Association for Regional Co-operation (SAARC)[17] was established in 1985 with the view of promoting economic, social and cultural co-operation among its members.[18] While most of these organisations have survived into the twenty-first century, they have had to change or adapt their original agendas in order to provide for new challenges. To this effect, they have increasingly incorporated security aspects without abandoning their original goals. Obviously, numerous integration efforts in South America had failed due to many factors, thus the formation of Mercosur represented a fresh attempt with a limited geographic focus.

2.3 CONFLICT POTENTIAL

The southern cone has for many years been characterised by either real or latent conflicts. These conflicts or, more appropriately, tensions, were fuelled by or promoted by military rule in many of the South American states. Rivalries for regional dominance, especially between Argentina and Brazil, and unresolved border disputes such as those between Argentina and Chile, resulted in limited friendly interactions between governments and perpetuated mutual suspicions. In fact, since the signing of the 1881 Boundary Treaty, which sought to settle the border dispute between Argentina and Chile, both countries have been hovering on the brink of going to war on this issue.[19] Similarly, there have always been simmering tensions between Bolivia and Paraguay, which culminated in the Chaco War in 1932-1937, the only major disturbance to peace in South America in the whole twentieth century.[20] Even the Falklands War of 1982 between Britain and Argentina had limited consequences for the region.

As a general rule, where there is vagueness and ambiguity in the drafting of a treaty designed to end a conflict, such conflict is bound to resurface as the context, the real or imaginary features, or the perceptual understanding of the conflict changes. The Boundary Treaty amply

bears testimony to that reality. This is particularly relevant in the case of the territorial acquisitions by Brazil and Argentina following the so-called War of the Triple Alliance (1865-1870) or the National Epic — as it is known in Paraguay. The war erupted as a result of Paraguay attempting to attack Uruguay by sending troops through Argentina without the latter's prior approval. Consequently, Paraguay faced the combined military force of Argentina, Brazil and Uruguay. The Chileans made similar territorial acquisitions following the War of the Pacific (1879-1883) when they defeated the combined force of Bolivia and Peru.[21]

These territorial and other tensions have consistently persisted throughout the twentieth century. It is noteworthy that these conflicts and/or tensions are linked to specific natural resources that have direct political, economic, security or strategic value. Any denial of access to these resources through treaties or agreements does not necessarily diminish their intrinsic value. With the demise of the Cold War, the River Plate countries resolved to form Mercosur, which has a conflict resolution and management mechanism. Through this mechanism the member countries are able to resolve conflicts amicably. In this manner, the formation of Mercosur has provided an umbrella body under which the increasingly complex modern-day issues, including security issues, could be addressed. Indeed, one of the contributory factors towards the acceptance of this approach has been the democratisation process that is increasingly being established in South America.

2.4 DEMOCRATISATION PROCESS

The South American countries have a longer history of concerted efforts to establish democratic governments in the region than most other regions such as Africa. Consistently, they realised the intrinsic connection between peace, stability and democracy. Ironically, the democratic process has been threatened by the military establishment quite more often than in other regions excluding Africa. Such efforts at democratisation can be traced as far back as 1936 when states recognised the existence of democracy as a source of common interest in the Americas. It was enshrined in the Declaration of Principles of Inter-American Solidarity and Co-operation of the Inter-American Conference on the Consolidation of Peace that was held in Buenos Aires in 1936. This stance was further emphasised by the Uruguayan Minister of Foreign Affairs, Dr Eduardo Rodríguez Larreta, when on 21 November 1945 he proposed to

the American governments to suspend or restrict the principle of non-intervention in the internal affairs of another country. He argued that state security and regional stability were being threatened by people who wanted to interrupt democratic processes in the knowledge that no other country would intervene. However, this proposal was never accepted but it demonstrated the seriousness with which the defence of democracy was being viewed by some of the South American states.[22]

During the immediate post-WW II environment the UN was formed, and it is notable that 20 of the first 51 member states were from Latin America. The link between security and democracy was further strengthened when South American (not necessarily Latin American) countries signed the Inter-American Treaty of Reciprocal Assistance or, as it is popularly known — the Rio Pact on 09 February 1947. The Rio Pact was essentially a regional/hemispheric collective security agreement which, according to Article 4, stretched from the North Pole to the South Pole in the Western Hemisphere. It committed signatories in Article 6 to common action or defence in the event that —

> "the inviolability or integrity of the territory or the sovereignty or political independence of any American State should be affected by an aggression which is not an armed attack or by an extra-continental or intra-continental conflict, or by any other fact or situation [which] might endanger peace of America."[23]

In 1948, the Charter establishing the Organization of American States (OAS) was signed. As the paranoia with communism escalated, the US was able to convert the OAS into a bastion against all communist influence in the Western Hemisphere. Both the Charter and the Rio Pact enabled the US to assume the leadership role in addressing the security concerns of the Americas.[24] The Charter calls for the recognition of democracy as a preferred form of government and an amicable resolution of conflicts. To this effect, the Charter of the OAS[25] declared the purposes of the organisation in Article 2 as being, *inter alia*, to —

- strengthen the peace and security of the continent;
- provide for common action on the part of those states in the event of aggression; and
- promote, by cooperative action, their economic, social, and cultural development.

Furthermore, the economic dimension was emphasised in Article 3 where it is stated that "[e]conomic cooperation is essential to the common welfare and prosperity of the peoples of the continent."[26] The OAS also passed numerous declarations, resolutions and measures to force its member states to entrench democracy and keep the military establishment out of politics. Such measures and resolutions had not yet borne sufficient fruit by the late 1980s.[27] However, this situation changed following the decision taken in Santiago, Chile, in June 1991. The foreign ministers of the Americas, who gathered for the General Assembly of the OAS, adopted Resolution 1080[28] or the so-called the Santiago Commitment to Democracy and the Renewal of the Inter-American System. In terms of Resolution 1080, the OAS was mandated to intervene automatically in any country where there was an illegal interruption of the democratic process in the region. In fact, this resolution ensured a speedy response to disturbances in Haiti, Peru and Guatemala. It changed the moral requirement of defending democracy in any part of the region to a legal obligation that had to operate automatically. The resolution was further strengthened by the amending the Charter of the OAS through the Protocol of Washington of 14 December 1992. Article 9 of the Charter read as follows:

> "A member of the Organization whose democratically constituted government has been overthrown by force may be suspended from the exercise of the right to participate in the sessions of the General Assembly, the Meeting of Consultation, the Councils of the Organization and the Specialized Conferences as well as the commissions, working groups and any other bodies established."[29]

The mid-eighties saw the military governments giving way to civilian rule in South America. In Argentina, for instance, a civilian government took over in December 1983 under President Raúl Alfonsín. Having been isolated by the international community and also still recovering from the Falklands/Malvinas War, one of Alfonsín's priorities was the reinsertion of Argentina into international affairs. The Alfonsín administration faced a dual challenge: satisfying the international community that it was genuinely democratising and also keeping the military establishment satisfied. This proved daunting, as on the one hand Argentina espoused disarmament, but, on the other, it still continued with the nuclear programmes of the previous military regimes. Even when Carlos Saúl Menem took over from Alfonsín in 1989, the situation did not improve.[30] Similar challenges faced Brazil as well. In Brazil, for instance, José Sarney took over as a civilian president from the military. However, during his

reign the military were still too powerful, and Sarney still found it difficult to change the developmentalist model of the military. Security was still viewed strictly in military terms and economic development was to be achieved with a view to bolstering military prowess. Thus the real democratisation phase commenced only in March 1990 with the inauguration of Fernando Collor de Mello as the President of Brazil. He introduced a market economy by liberalising trade, eliminating tariff barriers, and attempting to integrate the Brazilian economy into the global system. High on his priority list were the following aspects which later led to the formation of Mercosur: the integration of Southern Cone countries; reducing foreign debt; improving technology; and dealing with environmental issues.[31] With military conflicts and the role of the military in politics receding, there was an increasing need to expedite regional economic co-operation in the face of globalisation.

2.5 GLOBALISATION

Globalisation is arguably the most compelling factor which made the establishment of Mercosur a reality. In analysing the globalisation phenomenon, Singer[32] posed a question: what is it [globalisation] all about? He posits that there has been financial, economic and cultural internationalisation since at least Marco Polo's trip to the Far East. Despite limited capacity to navigate long distances, the great empires of Asia and Europe were able to maintain commercial links. By the 15th century, when the Portuguese and Spanish started with their transoceanic navigations, Africa and the Americas were already integrated into the economic system of the world — even though at primitive stages. However, with new technologies, especially in the area of communication and transportation, internationalisation underwent a qualitative change which transformed it to globalisation. This qualitative change was helped by the existence of global peace, even though peace was tense and armed. Singer further identifies globalisation in two main spheres, namely, economic and political. In the political sphere, globalisation relates to the ability of the world system to create and sustain supra-national institutions. These international governmental institutions, such as the European Parliament of the European Union (EU) and the African Parliament of the African Union (AU), should be able to determine and codify international law. It is noteworthy that political globalisation has been less successful than economic globalisation.[33]

In the economic sphere, globalisation seeks to widen national markets. As already indicated, this has the potential to expand or destroy national economies. Expansion of markets could

also be detrimental to the national economy, thus bringing about insecurity. It is against this background that, despite pressures of globalisation dictating otherwise, the expansion of national markets is hardly ever a purely economic matter.[34] It includes security issues both in the political and strategic senses. The demise of the Cold War left few global players in the economic field. The economic giants of the rich Global North sought to swallow small and unprotected markets. Most of these unprotected markets happened to be in the poor Global South. Realising that participation in the globalisation phenomenon held more advantages for nations than non-participation, developing countries had to form larger entities. While most regional entities had a very strong economic bias, their agendas gradually expanded to include political and security issues. This stemmed from the realisation that security or interdependence in one field naturally implied strengthening relations in others. The formation of regional entities, such as Mercosur, would enable states to challenge global prejudices and present a common front in international fora.

3. THE ESTABLISHMENT OF MERCOSUR

The origins of the Mercosur group can be traced back to the early sixties when efforts at integration in Europe in the form of European Economic Community (EEC) of 1957, threatened to exclude a large number of Latin American agricultural products. Talks were initiated for renegotiating and expanding intra-regional preferential trade agreements within the framework of the General Agreement on Trade and Tariffs (GATT). This was based on the clause of non-discriminatory trade on the basis of 'Most Favoured Nations' (MFN) status in GATT. Consequently, Article XXIV of GATT provided a basis for the creation of the Latin American Free Trade Association (LAFTA/ALALC) in terms of the Treaty of Montevideo of 1960. ALALC sought to establish a free trade area through removing all forms of restrictions to trade. When this could not be achieved according to schedule, the period was extended to twenty years in terms of the Caracas Protocol of 1969. However, the new target dates could also not be accomplished mainly due to two factors: economic and political harmony and co-operation had not yet been achieved in the region, and an inherent incompatibility of inward-looking economic strategies of individual countries. In addition, there were limitations with regard to relatively small market size and the continued protection of highly inefficient industrial sectors which collectively created a deficit in the region's balance of payments. Macroeconomic policies among partners were not yet harmonised and

there was also no mechanism to deal with the uneven distribution of costs and benefits of the integration process.[35]

As already stated, the integration process that had been initiated by the Treaty of Montevideo was once again resuscitated in 1981 through the creation of ALADI which replaced ALALC. The ALADI arrangement was in line with the GATT requirements in terms of the Enabling Clause which created preferential conditions for trade among developing countries. The ALADI Treaty sought to engender co-operation in the region by creating a Latin American common market. This was to be achieved through a regional tariff preference (that is tariff reductions for the benefit of third countries); agreements of regional scope (applicable to all members of ALADI); and agreements of partial scope (those agreements binding two or more member countries). No specific target dates were set. Bilateral and multilateral agreements were encouraged in order to foster intra-regional co-operation.[36] However, at the same time as the ALADI process, an important event occurred which could be regarded as the turning point in the formation of Mercosur. The long-standing rivals — Argentina and Brazil, together with Paraguay — signed a tripartite agreement. The agreement set up a mechanism that had to be used in dealing with the border water resources. This harmony at diplomatic level provided impetus to the integration process.[37]

The ALADI arrangement recognised the principle of 'differential treatment', which permitted member states to enter into agreements taking cognisance of the different levels of economic development. To this effect, three categories were identified in terms of economic performance, namely, *advanced* (e.g. Argentina, Brazil and Mexico), *intermediate* (e.g. Uruguay), and *less developed* (e.g. Paraguay).[38]

The integration efforts of the Montevideo arrangement fizzled out due to many factors, including the fact that some countries were still under military governments, while others were in transition to democratic rule and others were still immersed in intense hegemonic rivalries, especially between Argentina and Brazil. In addition, poor external economic conditions precipitated a crippling international debt crisis which, in turn, caused members to re-adopt protectionist policies — all to the detriment of intra-regional trade. However, as the democratisation process was apparently becoming irreversibly entrenched, the Montevideo process was revived, but with more vigour and determination. In the interim, Argentina and

Brazil signed in 1986 the so-called Program for Integration and Economic Co-operation (PICE). The primary aim of PICE was to ensure sectoral co-operation, especially in such sectors as capital goods, food, technological co-operation, and iron, steel, nuclear and auto industries. PICE helped allay the fears of potential investors in each country that their investments would be in danger. Subsequently, the two countries undertook an even more ambitious project when in November 1988 they signed the Treaty on Integration, Cooperation, and Development. With this treaty both countries sought to open up trade between themselves and to form a common market within ten years. On 6 July 1990 they signed the Act of Buenos Aires in terms of which they undertook to establish a common market by 1995. Subsequent to that an agreement called the *Acuerdo Complementario Económico* (Agreement for Economic Complementarity — ACE) was signed. ACE sought to synchronise the macroeconomic policies of the participating countries and it consolidated all bilateral agreements between Brazil and Argentina. [39] Consequently on 26 March 1991 the Argentine Republic, the Federative Republic of Brazil, the Republic of Paraguay and the Eastern Republic of Uruguay signed the Treaty of Asunción which established Mercosur.[40]

4 'OPEN REGIONALISM' CONCEPT

The nature and character of Mercosur is based on the 'open regionalism' concept. In contrast to the traditional import-substituting *desarrollo hacia adentro* economic strategies of the 1960s, the 'open regionalism' concept as embodied in the Treaty of Asunción espouses an approach which portrays integration into the world economy as a mere extension of national markets. The proponents of this concept believe that not only does the qualitative aspect of services, goods and products improve but exporters get opportunities to maximise their profits. The previous economic policies were primarily inward-looking in focus, and therefore very myopic in outlook.[41] In 1991 countries such as Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Mexico, Peru and Venezuela started embracing trade liberalisation on an unprecedented scale. The formation of Mercosur was partly attributable to the economic realities at the time as regional economies worldwide were integrating in one way or another. But there also was a growing fear that Europe would become inward-looking and create a 'fortress Europe'.[42]

The relative success of the 'open regionalism' concept as applied by the Mercosur group does not imply that co-operative arrangements based on 'closed regionalism' are bound to fail. For

instance, the EU, which is based on the 'closed regionalism' concept, is extremely successful. The fundamental difference between the two concepts is that, while 'closed regionalism' as exemplified by the EU relies on creating a barrier to trade with non-members, 'open regionalism' such as that of Mercosur and the Asian Newly Industrialised Countries (NICs) — also known as the 'Asian Tigers' — seeks to establish a common approach to extra-regional commerce by opening their national markets.[43] Thus both models of regional integration can be successful as long as the peculiar regional characteristics are carefully analysed and a suitable model chosen.[44]

It was this 'open regionalism' concept which caused much apprehension and public protest from the farmers in Paraguay and Chile during the formation of Mercosur. The peasant communities (particularly maize and livestock farmers) charged that their countries would be flooded with cheap agricultural products from Argentina and Brazil, while export-orientated sectors such as wine and fresh fruit, favoured the agreement as it would enable them to penetrate the large Argentine and Brazilian markets.[45] However, this did not deter member states as they realised that the advantages of joining the group far outweighed the disadvantages that would only affect certain sectors of the economy.

5. DEFINING THE MERCOSUR GROUP

The notion of Mercosur was a direct crystallisation of the forces of integration, including ALADI, which preceded it. The member states of Mercosur undertook to establish a common market that would be responsible for *inter alia* the free movement of goods, services and factors of production between member countries; the establishment of a common external tariff (CET) and the adoption of a common trade policy in relation to third states or groups of states; co-ordination of positions in regional and international economic and commercial forums; and the co-ordination of macro-economic and sectoral policies between the states parties in the areas of, for instance, foreign trade, agriculture industry, fiscal and monetary matters.[46] The ultimate goal was to create a South American Free Trade Area (SAFTA) along the lines of North American Free Trade Area (NAFTA).

Membership of Mercosur was deliberately limited to the four constituent countries (Argentina, Brazil, Paraguay and Uruguay), ostensibly with a view to preventing it from

becoming too big to manage (see Map 1 below). However, a saving clause was included in order not to place it on a collision course with the regional neighbours. To this effect, Article 20 of the founding treaty — Asunción Treaty, stipulates that:

> This Treaty shall be open to accession, through negotiation, by other countries members of the Latin American Integration Association. Their applications may be considered by the States Parties once this Treaty has been in force for five years. Notwithstanding the above, applications made by countries members of the Latin American Integration Association who do not belong to sub-regional integration schemes or an extraregional association may be considered before the date specified. Approval of applications shall require the unanimous decision of the States Parties.[47]

This left open the possibility of extra-regional countries joining the group. Thus no new member would be admitted before March 1996 if such countries participated in any other regional integration process. It is against this background that some countries in South America are at different stages of negotiating for membership. Chile and Bolivia are already associate members while Venezuela, Colombia and Peru have indicated a willingness to join Mercosur.[48] Bolivia, which has been an associate member since the Colonia meeting in January 1994, conducts 60 per cent of its trade with Mercosur but is also a member of the Andean Group, thus creating a legal hurdle. While Chile, which became an associate member of Mercosur on 25 June 1996, is not a member of the Andean Group, it has ratified the NAFTA agreement. Both countries attend Mercosur meetings as observers.[49]

Of particular interest to South Africa is the fact that Brazil, a dominant member of Mercosur, has indicated on numerous occasions its willingness to embrace other extra-regional countries in South America "as well as gradually enlarging the regional integration process to areas beyond Mercosul, according to a strategic and long term view …"[50] Furthermore, the Brazilian perspective on Mercosur is that it "is not just economic in its aims; it is also a long-term political enterprise intended to help consolidate democracy … by reducing remaining bilateral tensions."[51] The historical involvement of the military in politics, especially in countries now constituting Mercosur, prompted these countries to state that the primary objectives of the group were to defend democracy and maintain peace and security. To achieve this, they would strive to ensure economic development and social justice.[52] In this

regard, the Mercosur partners applauded Argentina's ratification of the Treaty of Tlatelolco which declares Latin America a nuclear-free zone, and also the fact that Brazil had halted its military-run nuclear research programme. These security-related successes are specifically attributable to these countries' membership of Mercosur.[53]

6. MERCOSUR'S INSTITUTIONAL FRAMEWORK AND FUNCTIONS

The founding treaty of Mercosur stated that Mercosur's institutional framework should be finalised before 31 December 1994. This framework was eventually finalised on 17 December 1994 when the Ouro Preto Protocol was signed. The Ouro Preto Protocol gave Mercosur the status of a juristic person, thus enabling it to enter into agreement with non-Mercosur member states, and provided it with an institutional structure for administration. The main organs of Mercosur are —

- the Council of the Common Market (the highest organ of Mercosur responsible for political leadership and strategic decisions);
- the Common Market Group (the executive organ of Mercosur);
- the Mercosur Trade Commission (responsible for monitoring the implementation of the common trade policy instruments);
- the Joint Parliamentary Commission (representing the parliaments of States Parties and responsible for the harmonisation of national legislations and the speeding up of the implementation of decisions taken by Mercosur organs);
- the Economic-Social Consultative Forum (representing the socio-economic sectors and responsible for providing recommendations to the Common Market Group); and
- the Mercosur Administrative Secretariat (providing operational support to the Mercosur organs).[54]

Map 1: The four Mercosul Countries

Source: *Adapted from* De Noronha Goyos, D. 1995. "Mercosul Structures and Perspectives." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 11, No. 1, p. 18.

The institutional structure of Mercosur is geared to perform its set goals and enables Mercosur to link up relatively smoothly with other regional organisations and extra-regional states. Extra-regional states will be able to identify specific sectors of relevance and importance to them through the Mercosur Trade Commission or the Economic Social Consultative Forum (see Table 1).

Table 1: MERCOSUR ORGANS AND THEIR FUNCTIONS

ORGAN	FUNCTIONS
Council of the Common Market (CCM)	* To supervise the implementation of the Treaty of Asunción, its protocols, and agreements signed within its context. * To formulate policies and promote the measures necessary to build the common market. * To assume the legal personality of Mercosur. * To negotiate and sign agreements, on behalf of Mercosur, with third countries, groups of countries and international organisations. * To rule on proposals submitted to it by the Common Market Group; * To arrange meetings of ministers and rule on agreements which those meetings refer to it. * To establish the organs it considers appropriate, and to modify or abolish them. * To clarify, when it considers necessary, the substance and scope of its decisions. * To appoint the Director of the Mercosur Administrative Secretariat. * To adopt financial and budgetary decisions. * To approve the rules of procedure of the Common Market Group.
Common Market Group (CMG)	* To monitor, within the limits of its competence, compliance with the Treaty of Asunción, its Protocols, and agreements signed within its framework. * To propose draft Decisions to the Council of the Common Market. * To take the measures necessary to enforce the Decisions adopted by the Council of the Common Market. * To draw up programmes of work to ensure progress towards the establishment of the common market. * To establish, modify or abolish organs such as working groups and special meetings for the purpose of achieving its objectives. * To express its views on any proposals or recommendations submitted to it by other Mercosur organs within their sphere of competence.

	* To negotiate, with the participation of representatives of all the States Parties, when expressly so delegated by the Council of the Common Market and within the limits laid down in special mandates granted for that purpose, agreements on behalf of Mercosur with third countries, groups of countries and international organisations. When so mandated, the Common Market Group shall sign the aforementioned agreements. When so authorised by the Council of the Common Market, the Common Market Group may delegate these powers to the Mercosur Trade Commission. * To approve the budget and the annual statement of accounts presented by the Mercosur Administrative Secretariat. * To adopt financial and budgetary Resolutions based on the guidelines laid down by the Council. * To submit its rules of procedure to the Council of the Common Market. * To organise the meetings of the Council of the Common Market and to prepare the reports and studies requested by the latter. * To choose the Director of the Mercosur Administrative Secretariat. * To supervise the activities of the Mercosur Administrative Secretariat. * To approve the rules of procedure of the Trade Commission and the Economic-Social Consultative.
Mercosur Trade Commission (MTC)	* To monitor the application of the common trade policy instruments both within Mercosul and with respect to third countries, international organisations and trade agreements. * To consider and rule upon the requests submitted by the States Parties in connection with the application of and compliance with the common external tariff and other instruments of common trade policy. * To follow up the application of the common trade policy instruments in the States Parties. * To analyse the development of the common trade policy instruments relating to the operation of the customs union and to submit Proposals in this respect to the Common Market Group. * To take decisions connected with the administration and application of the common external tariff and the common trade policy instruments agreed by the States Parties. * To report to the Common Market Group on the development and application of the common trade policy instruments, on the consideration of requests received and on the decisions taken with respect to such requests; * To propose to the Common Market Group new Mercosur trade and customs regulations or changes in the existing regulations. * To propose the revision of the tariff rates for specific items of the common external tariff, *inter alia*, in order to deal with cases relating to new

	production activities within Mercosur. * To set up the technical committees needed for it to perform its duties properly, and to direct and supervise their activities. * To perform tasks connected with the common trade policy requested by the Common Market Group. * To adopt rules of procedure to be submitted to the Common Market Group for approval.
Joint Parliamentary Commission (JPC)	* It shall endeavour to speed up the corresponding internal procedures in the States Parties in order to ensure the prompt entry into force of the decisions taken by the Mercosur organs. * It shall assist with the harmonisation of legislations, as required to advance the integration process. * When necessary, the Council shall request the Joint Parliamentary Commission to examine priority issues.
Economic Social Consultative Forum (ESCF)	* It has a consultative function and shall express its views in the form of Recommendations to the Common Market Group.
Mercosur Administrative Secretariat (MAS)	* Serves as the official archive for Mercosur documentation. * Publish and circulate the decisions adopted within the framework of Mercosur. In this context, it shall: - make, in co-ordination with the States Parties, authentic translations in Spanish and Portuguese of all the decisions adopted by the organs of the Mercosur institutional structure, in accordance with the provisions of Article 39; - publish the Mercosur official journal. * Organise the logistical aspects of the meetings of the Council of the Common Market, the Common Market Group and the Mercosur Trade Commission and, as far as possible, the other Mercosur organs, when those meetings are held at its headquarters. In the case of meetings held outside its headquarters, the Mercosur Administrative Secretariat shall provide support for the State in which the meeting is held. * Regularly inform the States Parties about the measures taken by each country to incorporate in its legal system the decisions adopted by the Mercosur organs provided for in Article 2 of this Protocol. * Compile national lists of arbitrators and experts, and perform other tasks defined in the Brasilia Protocol of 17 December 1991; * Perform tasks requested by the Council of the Common Market, the Common Market Group and the Mercosur Trade Commission; * Draw up its draft budget and, once this has been approved by the Common Market Group, do everything necessary to ensure its proper implementation;

	* Submit its statement of accounts annually to the Common Market Group, together with a report on its activities.

Source: Protocol of Ouro Preto signed by the Mercosur member states at the city of Ouro Preto, Federative Republic of Brazil, on 17 December 1994.

The economic potential provided by Mercosur is enormous (see Table 2). With a population of over 200 million, and a combined Gross Domestic Product (GDP) of over US$1.4 trillion, partnership with Mercosur could enable countries especially in Africa to find accessible markets that are premised on almost similar recent history of political and economic developments. Even the debt burden is characteristic of developing countries. Unlike Brazil and Paraguay, both Argentina and Uruguay are heavily indebted with external debt constituting just over 40 per cent and almost 25 per cent of their GDP respectively.

Table 2: PROFILE OF THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES, 2000

Country	**Population size (million)***	**Territorial size ('000 km^2)**	**GDP (US$bn)****	**External Debt (US$bn)****
Argentina	36.9	2 767	367	149
Brazil	172.9	8 512	1 057	200
Paraguay	5.6	407	19	2.7
Uruguay	3.3	177	28	8
TOTAL	***218.7***	***1 1863***	***1 471***	***359.7***

* July 2000 estimate.
** 1999 estimate.

Source*:** United States of America (USA) Central Intelligence Agency (CIA). 2000. ***World Factbook 2000. www.odci.government/ cia/publications/factbook/geos

In 1990, Brazil was (and still is) by far the largest partner in the Mercosur group in all respects, followed by Argentina in a distant second place. Brazil alone accounted for 79 per cent of total population, 72 per cent of the GNP, 67 per cent of the total exports and 76 per cent of the total imports destined for the group. In the same year Brazil absorbed a third of total exports by Argentina and Paraguay, and 30 per cent by Uruguay. Thus, the continued survival of Mercosur is largely dependent on the economic, political and social stability of Brazil. It is notable that Brazil is regarded as a 'pivotal state', not only for the Mercosur partners, but also the whole world. Being the fifth most populous country in the world; its economy being the eighth largest in the world in terms of 1996 GDP figures; being regarded

as one of the 'big emerging markets'; and its rain forests holding the greatest collection of biodiversity in the world — Brazil certainly is pivotal in ensuring global security.[55] Similar to the US, which has identified Brazil as being a crucial market for its products and a partner in bringing about global security, South Africa's economic, political and security interests are served through the partnership with Mercosur.

7. THE PERFORMANCE OF THE MERCOSUR GROUP

Since its establishment in 1991 the Mercosur group has achieved relative success when compared with other regional groups among the developing countries, such as the ASEAN and the SADC. Much of its success as a sub-regional entity could be attributed to the following factors:

- *Small size*: It comprises only four members (Argentina, Brazil, Paraguay and Uruguay, with Bolivia and Chile as associate members).

- *High value congruence*: There is a high degree of congruence with regard to political and social values, but especially a common commitment to democracy, an aversion to kleptocracy and a shared Latin culture.

- *Common economic interests and perspectives*: The member states share a common vision and a similar perception of risks and opportunities. This is exemplified by the relative ease with which the strategy of macro-economic stabilisation or liberalisation was accepted among the member states.

- *Good personal and political relations*: There is a direct link among the heads of states and government and they also communicate quite regularly.

- *Good capacity to manage complex policy and technical issues*: Member states have adequate human resource capital and a highly trained labour force.[56]

Given such compatibility, there has been an astronomical increase in trade with and within Mercosur since 1985 (see Tables 3 and 4 below). While both internal trade (which more than

tripled within fours years of integration) and foreign direct investment (FDI) (which has increased tenfold from 1990 to 1997) have shown substantial growth, the Mercosur group has not succeeded in making a significant mark in the world market. This could be attributed to the fact that only Brazil and Argentina have substantial export capacity. However, it remains the third largest customs union in the world after NAFTA and the EU. It could be argued that it maintains this position not necessarily because of its structure or operating procedures, but largely because other regional organisations are not even operating at 50 per cent of their potential capacity.

Table 3: TRADE RELATIONS WITH AND WITHIN MERCOSUR

Year / Factor	1985 (US$bn)	1990 (US$bn)	1997 (US$bn)
Intra-regional trade	1.8	4.2	Over 20
Exports as % of World Trade	-	1.1 %	1.7%
Foreign Direct Investment	-	2.6	26.6

Source: Mills, G. & Mutschler, C. (eds.) ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA), p. 5.

Table 4: INTRA-REGIONAL TRADE WITHIN MERCOSUR, 1987 – 1994

Year	1987	1988	1989	1990	1991	1992	1993	1994
Trade (US$bn)	2 276	2 781	3 574	4 200*	5 289	7 323	10 055	13 000

* Denotes "figure adapted from Mutschler and Mills (1999:5)"

Source: De Noronha Goyos, D. 1995. "MERCOSUL Structures and Perspectives." ***Unisa Latin American Report,*** Vol. 11, No. 1, p. 17.

Table 5: COMPARISON OF BRAZIL'S IMPORTS FROM THE CURRENT MEMBER STATES IN 1980 WITH SPECIFIC MONTHS IN 1997

Country	1980 (US$m)	Month in 1997 with equivalent value
Argentina	756	June
Paraguay	91	April and May
Uruguay	196	January to March

Source: Mills, G. & Mutschler, C. (eds.) 1999. ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA), p. 26.

In intra-regional terms, trade volumes increased significantly as indicated in Table 4. For instance, Brazil's imports from its Mercosur partners in 1980 were achieved within a month or two in 1997 (see Table 5). Despite these achievements, Mercosur has been criticised by some observers, including the World Bank, that while intra-Mercosur trade grew, such trade came from sectors in which Mercosur members are not internationally competitive. The critics further argue that the internal free market turns Mercosur into a 'fortress' that deters its members from investing in their most efficient and internationally competitive industries.[57] Besides, the group still seems not immune to problems largely traceable to hegemonic rivalries of the past. For instance, Argentina and Brazil are occasionally confronting each other about issues pertaining to the design and especially interpretation and implementation of agreements. One sensitive trade area concerns the automotive industry with Argentina exporting about 30 per cent of vehicle production to Brazil while the latter exports only 7-8 per cent to the former.[58] Another thorny issue concerns the different exchange rate regimes between the two countries. Argentina continues to rigidly peg its currency to the US dollar, while Brazil decided in January 1999 to let its currency float and subsequently devalue it. Trade within the group fell by about 30 per cent in 1999 as Argentina reacted by restricting the influx of cheap imports from Brazil. These tensions demonstrated the inadequacy of conflict resolution and management mechanisms within the group.[59] Thus, Mercosur's macro-economic policies are still in a constant state of flux, but it has achieved much more stability and predictability than, for instance, within SADC.

8. CONCLUSION

The establishment of Mercosur, as discussed in this chapter, was a direct result of inescapable factors that are dominating the international system even today. Numerous attempts had previously been made to establish Mercosur, but all to no avail. This could be attributed to various factors, including the dominant role of the military in many South American countries and the myopic inward-looking policies of reigning regimes. With the advent of democracy in these countries, national interests and national security, as opposed to regime security, became a more inclusive process requiring national consensus. Furthermore, numerous other regional organisations had emerged, thus necessitating a review of extremely nationalist and protectionist policies which characterised most of South American governments' psyches at the time. The perennial fear of the resurgence of traditional hegemonic rivalries and sporadic

border disputes had diminished and a new democratic leadership had emerged. Thus, it could be concluded that the establishment of Mercosur or a similar organisation was inevitable.

However, the conceptualisation of Mercosur shows that it had undergone numerous iterations before it took the form that it eventually did. Unlike the EU, the constituting member states decided to pursue an 'open regionalism' model in spite of their vulnerability to being swamped by cheap and subsidised EU agricultural and other products. Membership was deliberately limited to four with the possibility of expansion after a certain measure of maturity had been achieved. This is contrary to the approach followed by such sub-regional organisations as SADC and ASEAN. The institutional structure was also designed in a manner that was flexible enough to allow for leeway in negotiating with extra-regional countries. However, there appears to be a weakness regarding especially conflict management and resolution mechanisms.

Since its inception, Mercosur has achieved relatively great success, particularly with regard to intra-regional trade. It is noteworthy that Brazil, and, to a lesser extent Argentina, plays a pivotal role in ensuring success of the group. As a group, Mercosur presents an incredibly large export market and an ideal strategic partner for South Africa's quest for especially human security for all in the SADC sub-region. As was indicated in the previous chapter, human security is premised on the satisfaction of basic human needs, protection of human rights and the centrality of individuals (or citizens) in the government's national security equation.

As will be seen in the next chapter on the socio-economic aspects of security regarding South Africa's relations with the Mercosur countries, the primary objective of most of the post-Cold War collaborative efforts are geared towards ensuring favourable economic development and mutual trade enhancement. The basis for this approach is the maximisation of socio-economic benefits accruing to co-operating states and the minimisation of potential risks that could dampen investor confidence. With the demise of the bipolarity in world politics which characterised the post-WW II international system, states, including South Africa, pursue trade relations at both bilateral and multilateral levels. A sectoral approach to security — military, economic, political, environmental — as identified by Buzan, necessitates complementing multilateral arrangements with bilateral ones.

In analysing the rationale and feasibility of co-operation on socio-economic issues between South Africa and the Mercosur countries, the next chapter looks at the quest for human security as predicated on development and freedom from fear of hunger, violence, environmental degradation and nuclear disasters of cataclysmic proportions. To achieve all these, South Africa has to engage its neighbours across the Atlantic Ocean, not so much with a view to ensuring national security in its Westphalian sense, but as a concerted effort aimed at achieving human security as well.

REFERENCES AND NOTES

1 Papp, D.S. 1992. ***Contemporary International Relations: Framework for Understanding***, Third Edition. New York: Macmillan Publishing Company, pp. 101-102.

2 Calvert, P. 1994. ***The International Politics of Latin America***. Manchester: Manchester University Press, p. 41

3 Hirst, M. "The Foreign Policy of Brazil: From the Democratic Transition to Its Consolidation", in Muñoz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996. ***Latin American Nations in World Politics***. Boulder: Westview Press, p. 199.

4 Calvert, P. *op cit,* pp. 54-55.

5 *Ibid.* pp. 43, 55.

6 Kegley, C.W. and Wittkopf, E.R. 1993. ***World Politics: Trends and Transformation***. New York: St. Martin's Press, pp. 180-181.

7 LATFA/ALALC consisted of Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Mexico, Paraguay, Peru and Uruguay. Bolivia and Venezuela joined the association in 1966 and 1967 respectively.

8 Calvert, P. *op cit*, p. 24.

9 The Council of Arab Economic Unity members are Iraq, Jordan, Kuwait, Libya, Mauritania, the Palestine Liberation Organisation (PLO), Somalia, Sudan, Syria, the United Arab Emirates, and Yemen.

10 The ASEAN members are Brunei, Indonesia, Malaysia, the Philippines, Singapore, and Thailand.

11 CARICOM members were: Antigua and Barbuda, the Bahamas, Barbados, Belize, Dominica, Grenada, Guyana, Jamaica, Montserrat, St. Kitts-Nevis, St. Lucia, St. Vincent and the Grenadines, and Trinidad and Tobago.

12 ECOWAS members are: Benin, Burkina Faso, Cape Verde, Gambia, Ghana, Guinea, Guinea-Bissau, Ivory Coast, Liberia, Mali, Mauritania, Niger, Nigeria, Senegal, Sierra Leone, and Togo.

13 Calvert, P. *op cit,* p. 24.

14 SADCC members were: Angola, Botswana, Lesotho, Malawi, Mozambique, Swaziland, Tanzania, Zambia, and Zimbabwe.

15 ALADI members are: Argentina, Bolivia, Brazil, Chile, Colombia, Ecuador, Mexico, Paraguay, Peru, Uruguay, and Venezuela.

16 www.iadb.or/int/intpub/nota/aladi.htm.

17 The members of SAARC were: Bangladesh, Bhutan, India, Maldives, Nepal, Pakistan, and Sri Lanka.

18 Kegley, C.W. and Wittkopf, E.R. *op cit,* p. 188.

19 Calvert, P. *op cit*, pp. 75-76.

20 *Ibid.* p. 41.

21 *Ibid.* pp. 9-10.

22 Muñoz, H. "Collective Action for Democracy in the Americas", in Muñoz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996, *op cit*, p. 19.

23 ***Inter-American Conference for the Maintenance of Continental Peace and Security***, signed on 9 February 1947, at Rio de Janeiro, Brazil.

[24] Atkins, G.P. 1995. ***Latin America in the International Political System***, Third Edition. Boulder: Westview Press, p. 40.

[25] Organisation of American States (OAS) General Secretariat. 1997. ***Charter of the Organization of American States***, as amended by the following protocols: ***Protocol of Buenos Aires***, signed on February 27, 1967, at the Third Special Inter-American Conference; ***Protocol of Cartagena de Indias***, approved on December 5, 1985, at the Fourteenth Special Session of the General Assembly; ***Protocol of Washington***, approved on December 14, 1992, at the Sixteenth Special Session of the General Assembly; and ***Protocol of Managua***, adopted on June 10, 1993, at the Nineteenth Special Session of the General Assembly.

[26] *Ibid*.

[27] Muñoz, H. *op cit*, pp. 17-18.

[28] OAS General Secretariat. ***OAS Resolution 1080 on "Representative Democracy,"*** Twenty-first General Assembly of the Organization of American States, Santiago, Chile, June 1991.

[29] OAS General Secretariat. ***Protocol of Washington***, approved on 14 December 1992, at the Sixteenth Special Session of the General Assembly, Washington, D.C., United States of America.

[30] Tulchin, J.S. "Continuity and Change in Argentine Foreign Policy", in Muñoz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) *op cit*, pp. 165-167.

[31] Hirst, M, in Muñoz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996 *op cit*, pp. 202-203.

[32] Singer, P. "Globalization: What is all about?", in Guimarães, S.P. (ed.) 1996. ***South Africa and Brazil: Risks and Opportunities in the Turmoil of Globalisation***. Rio de Janeiro: International Relations Research Institute, p. 429.

[33] *Ibid,* p. 430.

[34] *Ibid,* p. 431.

[35] Viejobueno, S.A.M. 1995. ***Mercosur: A Decisive Step Towards South American Economic Revival. Occasional Paper No. 10,*** Pretoria, November, Unisa Centre for Latin American Studies, pp. 18-20. See also Pereira, L.V. "Toward Common Market of the South: Mercosur's Origins, Evolution, and Challenges", in Roett, R. (ed.) 1999. ***Mercosur: Regional Integration, World Markets***. Boulder: Lynne Rienner Publishers, p. 8.

[36] Viejobueno, S.A.M, *op cit,* pp. 19-21.

[37] Pereira, L.V. *op cit*, p. 8.

[38] Viejobueno, S.A.M. *op cit,* p. 23.

[39] Hirst, M, in Muñoz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996, *op cit*, p. 213. See also Viejobueno, S.A.M, *op cit,* p. 25 and Pereira, L.V. *op cit*, p. 9.

[40] Treaty of Asunción signed on 26 March 1991 in Asunción, Paraguay. Member countries: Argentina, Brazil, Paraguay and Uruguay.

[41] Heine, J. "South-South Relations After the Cold War". A presentation made by the Ambassador of Chile to the Foreign Affairs Committee, National Assembly, South African Parliament. Cape Town, 7 June 1995.

[42] Viejobueno, S.A.M. 1995. *op cit,* p. 4.

[43] Zacarias, A. 1999. "From Closed to Open Regionalism", in Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. (eds.) ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***.

Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA), p. 69. See also Rosselli, E. 1999. "Mercosur's External Agenda", in Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. (eds.) *op cit,* p. 131.

[44] Cleary, S. 1998. "Mercosul's Experience: Implications for the SADC." ***South African Journal of International Affairs***, Vol. 6, No. 1, Summer, p. 55.

[45] "Farmers Oppose Free Trade". ***NAFTA & Inter-American Trade Monitor***, Vol. 3, No. 7, April 5, 1996.

[46] Treaty of Asunción of 26 March 1991. *op cit*.

[47] *Ibid*.

[48] www.mercopress.com. 22 November 2000.

[49] Institute for Agriculture and Trade Policy. 1996. "Chile and Mercosur Sign Pact." ***NAFTA & Inter-American Trade Monitor***, Vol. 3, No. 13, July 12. See also www.demon.co.uk/Itamaraty/artig6.html.

[50] www.demon.co.uk/Itamarty/artig6.html. *op cit.*

[51] *Ibid.*

[52] Barber, J. "Regional Co-operation and Integration: South Africa, the Southern African Development Community (SADC) and *Mercado Comun del Sur* (Mercosur)", in Guimarães, S.P. (ed.) 1996, *op cit,* p. 340.

[53] www.demon.co.uk/Itamarty/artig6.html. *op cit.*

[54] Protocol of Ouro Preto signed by the Mercosur member states at the city of Ouro Preto, Federative Republic of Brazil, on 17 December 1994.

[55] Krasno, J. "Brazil", in Chase, R.; Hill, E. and Kennedy, P. (eds.) 1999. ***The Pivotal States: A Framework for U.S. Policy in the Developing World***. London: W.W. Norton & Company, pp. 165-168.

[56] Cleary, S. 1998. *op cit*. p. 53

[57] Institute for Agriculture and Trade Policy. 1996. "Mercosur Fights Back". ***NAFTA & Inter-American Trade Monitor***, 13 December.

[58] ***The Star*** (Johannesburg), 7 December 1999.

[59] De Souza, A. 2000. "Lessons from Patagonia." ***Finance Week***, 7 April, p. 23.

CHAPTER THREE

SOUTH AFRICA, SADC AND MERCOSUR: SOCIO-ECONOMIC CO-OPERATION AND SECURITY

1. INTRODUCTION

One of the salient features of the second half of the twentieth century has been the ascendance of socio-economic issues in international relations. Through these issues states rewarded their allies (in the form of preferential access to their markets, most-favoured nation status, easy credit loans, and so forth) and 'punished' their enemies (through excessive tariff and non-tariff barriers). Prior to, but especially after WW II, the globe was divided into two hostile economic systems, namely, the capitalist bloc and the socialist bloc, led respectively by the US and the former Soviet Union. States from both camps had to ensure a free flow of essential raw materials and goods required for the military industrial complex. High on the priority list were strategic resources such as oil, plutonium, uranium and gold. The attempts to keep the supply lines open created tensions. These socio-economic tensions induced by the imperative of maintaining large military industries, persisted until the late 1980s during the demise of the former Soviet Union. Consequently, the focus changed from ensuring economic growth with a view to financing massive defence spending, to that of increasing social spending. However, the protection of links and routes for transporting essential goods and services remain crucial for all countries, given the threat posed by rogue states, and pirate and terrorist groups.[1]

Regional co-operation and/or integration defy a single definition, but both concepts are characterised by the desire to improve the welfare of parties by eradicating all or most forms of restrictions on interaction and co-operation. Conceptually there is a fundamental, but increasingly blurred, difference between integration and co-operation between states. Generally, it is assumed that the natural progression process, especially among contiguous states, is that co-operation should lead to integration. But this is not necessarily always the case. According to Barber,[2] co-operation refers to an "agreement between governments to act jointly for specific ends, and usually does not involve the creation of a regional structure or institutions." Unlike co-operation, integration involves the transfer of elements of sovereignty to a regional organisation. As a general rule, closer economic co-operation

engenders mutual economic development, thus bringing about increased income and efficiency, improved political stability in the region and strengthens the bargaining power of members in multilateral forums. Throughout this discussion, 'economic integration' will be seen as referring to "the process of reducing or eliminating the economic significance of national boundaries within a geographic area, namely, the treatment of hitherto separate economic units as a single economic area."[3] It should be noted that economic integration is normally facilitated by many factors, including political, military and strategic considerations. For instance, the European Union idea originated from those unique historical, geopolitical and economic circumstances of Western Europe. Similarly, NAFTA, comprising the US, Canada and Mexico, has implications and arrangements that go way beyond strictly economic issues. Through NAFTA, member states are able to deal with security threats such as drug-trafficking, illegal immigration and the environment.[4]

Relations between South Africa and the countries of the Mercosur group fall largely in the realm of co-operation in socio-economic matters with a view to improving the living standards of their citizenry. This chapter discusses co-operation within the context of South Africa's relations with the Mercosur group, state-to-state interaction (namely, South Africa's relations with individual countries) and, lastly, it analyses the potential impact of such relations on the Southern African sub-region or the SADC of which South Africa is a member. The common thread running through the analysis is based on the expanded notion of economic security as discussed in Chapter 1. However, the emphasis is on socio-economic relations and the potential impact this may have on security.

2. SOUTH-SOUTH RELATIONS

Since the establishment of Mercosur and the advent of democracy in South Africa there have been increased efforts to cement ties across the South Atlantic region. Unlike in the past where the most glaring feature of international affairs was East-West confrontation, the rallying point in the post-Cold War scenario was the promotion of South-South co-operation. The economic polarisation of the globe into 'First' World (the rich industrialised countries of the North), 'Second' World (the state socialism of Central and Eastern Europe) and 'Third' World (the poor, developing countries of Africa, Asia and Latin America) became inappropriate when the 'Second' World collapsed. Consequently, the North-South divide became the new main fault-line characterising international affairs. It was against this

background that post-apartheid South Africa, like many other countries in the region, sought to strengthen economic, political and other forms of co-operation within the context of South-South relations.

Historically, co-operation among the countries of the South has not been particularly good. The watershed in South-South relations, according to the Jorge Heine, the former Chilean Ambassador to South Africa up to 1995, was the 1973 oil shock, and the "New International Economic Order" (NIEO) became the buzzword.[5] Rich countries of the North realised the magnitude of potential disruption that collective action by some Third World oil-producing countries could have on their global industrial output. The seriousness with which North-South issues were taken, in the aftermath of the oil shock, in international forums dwindled to negligible levels by the late 1980s. Despite the relative loss of strategic value of the developing countries following the demise of the former Soviet Union, there were already indications that some of that lost value could be recovered in the socio-economic realm. By 1995 the US had already identified ten countries as emerging markets that are critical for the world economy for the period ending in 2005. These countries are: Greater China (the Peoples' Republic of China plus Taiwan and Hong Kong), South Korea, India, Indonesia, Brazil, Mexico, Argentina, South Africa, Poland and Russia. It was further speculated that the combined exports of these countries would exceed those of Japan and the European Union by the year 2005.[6] It is notable that two of these countries are from the Mercosur group (Argentina and Brazil) and only one from Africa — South Africa.

3. SOUTH AFRICA'S SOCIO-ECONOMIC RELATIONS WITH THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES AND SECURITY IMPLICATIONS

With the ascendancy of socio-economic issues topping international agendas, it is imperative that individual countries identify strategic partners both at bilateral and multilateral levels. While it could be argued that the investors, especially in the form of multi-national corporations (MNCs), are generally pursuing profit targets and therefore would invest in any country where that could be realised, the host country stands to benefit even more. Direct investments ensure higher employment levels, increase the national tax base, improve a country's infrastructure, and the potential for political instability emanating from lack of service delivery is vastly reduced. Thus it is crucial for all responsible governments to strike

valuable partnership and co-operation agreements with like-minded allies, as South Africa sought to do with Mercosur.

3.1 SOUTH AFRICA'S OFFICIAL VIEWS ON CO-OPERATION WITH SOUTH AMERICAN COUNTRIES PRIOR TO 1994

South Africa's quest for co-operation with its trans-Atlantic neighbours dates as far back as its conceptualisation of the so-called 'outward movement' policy. That government policy was geared towards gaining more acceptability from countries that had hitherto sidelined South Africa due to the policy of apartheid. The first priority was to be southern Africa, then the rest of Africa and lastly the rest of the world. It had become evident to the South African government that military prowess had to be complemented with political (diplomatic) and economic measures. To this effect, Dr Hilgard Muller, Minister of Foreign Affairs (1965-1977), identified South America in 1968, particularly Brazil and Argentina, as potential strategic partners. South Africa was at that stage experiencing tumultuous times in its political history as the African National Congress (ANC) and the Pan-Africanist Congress (PAC) had just been banned (following the Sharpville events and other anti-government activities) and the UN had also adopted resolutions calling for economic and diplomatic sanctions against South Africa.[7] The arms embargo imposed on South Africa in 1963 on a voluntary basis was made mandatory in 1977. Nuclear arms deals were also specifically proscribed.[8] The South African government treated information on the impact of economic sanctions on the country with utmost secrecy. When the issue of the impact of sanctions was raised on 12 March 1965 for the first time in parliament by E.G. Malan, Member of Parliament (MP), there was total unease about the question. Malan asked the Minister of Economic Affairs, Dr N. Diedericks:

> "Whether any countries have refused (a) to buy products from South Africa and (b) to sell products to South Africa since 1960; if so, which countries and products." He further wanted to know "what was the total value of (a) imports from and (b) exports to the countries concerned in (i) the last year preceding the refusal and (ii) the latest year for which figures are available."[9]

To these questions, the Minister of Economic Affairs answered as follows: "I do not regard it in the national interest to furnish this information."[10]

Faced with all odds from the West, South Africa highlighted the strategic importance of the Southern Hemisphere. The argument was based two fundamental realities. The first one was aptly articulated by J.J. Engelbrecht, National Party (NP) MP for Algoa, during the debate in the House of Assembly concerning concerted efforts to expand South Africa's relations with other countries. He indicated that the first 15 or 16 years since taking over the reigns of power, the NP government had to concentrate on consolidating its position and to 'sell' and defend the apartheid idea to the international community. He equated South Africa's isolationism with that of the US which had lasted for many decades.[11]

The second reality was the apparent nuclear stalemate between the US and the former Soviet Union, and the possibility that the latter would extend its manoeuvrings southwards. South Africa contended that the Soviet forces would attempt to outflank the US by overrunning the countries in the Southern Hemisphere, and South Africa was particularly vulnerable due to its geostrategic position. To counter such a move by the Soviet Union, a Western-oriented military alliance fashioned along the lines of the NATO was to be established and called the South Atlantic Treaty Organisation (SATO). This alliance was to comprise Argentina, Brazil, Australia and New Zealand. It was hoped that the US would extend its nuclear umbrella to cover the alliance as well. The net effect of such a move would be to alleviate South Africa's international isolation. Ironically, most South American geopoliticians also argued along similar lines that should South Africa fall under the Communist strategic umbrella, the Communist government would have access to the Indian Ocean, South Atlantic and one of the most strategic routes around the Cape of Good Hope.[12]

Even though the alliance idea never came to fruition (or at least, it was never publicly announced to exist), the 'outward movement' policy helped improve South Africa's acceptability in South America. By mid-1960, South Africa was already interacting with some South American countries within specialised strategic clubs such as the Satellite Communications Agreement which involved the US and other countries. While from South America only Argentina, Brazil, Chile and Colombia were invited to become members, from Africa it was only South Africa.[13] The main considerations for admitting South Africa to the group, despite its suspension in the UN, were its technical expertise and geostrategic position. Having been a South African ambassador in London where he got to interact with a number of South American diplomatic representatives, Dr Hilgard Muller, paid official visits to

Brazil, El Salvador, Paraguay and Uruguay on 8-30 July 1966 – the countries which, except for El Salvador, later formed the Mercosur group. The primary objective of such visits, as Dr Muller declared, was to implement the Department of Foreign Affairs' policy of personal visits to friendly countries and to ensure contact at government level with such countries.[14] There was a realisation that these political initiatives had to be augmented with economic ones as well.

By the late 1960s it had become evident that South Africa's isolation by the international community was going to be exacerbated by the protectionist policies of the then European Economic Community (EEC). Africa's lack of buying power of manufactured products compounded the problem. Thus, the South African government undertook a number of initiatives to stimulate trans-Atlantic trade flows. These included the following:

- In 1968, the state bought bonds issued by the Inter-American Development Bank to enable South African firms to tender for development projects financed by the bank.
- Latin American governments were offered export credits through the Credit Guarantee Insurance Corporation (CGIC), while the Industrial Development Corporation (IDC) provided assistance in the financing of projects for exporters.
- Participation by South African companies in international trade fairs in Latin America was facilitated by South African state officials.
- State assistance was provided to improve air, shipping and telecommunication links between South Africa and Latin America.
- Diplomatic contact with Latin America was expanded through official visits and the establishment of new missions.[15]

South American countries and South Africa, through the Minister of Economic Affairs, J. Haak, criticised the General Agreement on Tariffs and Trade (GATT) rules, as the latter favoured the industrialised North to the detriment of the poor South. Thus South Africa joined the proponents of the NIEO even though the former was regarded as an international *pariah* state due to its political system.[16] Viewed in this perspective, it is evident that South Africa's decision to engage South American countries, including those that later formed Mercosur, was prompted by threats to its broad national security. Factors such as the shrinking local market base, increasing international isolation and lack of buying power of African states, all collectively conspired to threaten South Africa's economic security.

Despite the above arguments indicating the involvement of South Africa in South America, such involvement, especially on the diplomatic and economic fronts, remained underdeveloped and subdued owing to the country's internal political system which was viewed by the international community with extreme abomination. Ironically, the only real military threat that ever confronted South Africa came from Cuba. The former South African Defence Force (SADF) faced the wrath of Cuban forces, which, at the height of the South Africa-Angola War (or the so-called 'Border War') peaked at 50 000 soldiers. As a region, South America as a whole did not have a common approach towards South Africa prior to 1994. Some even undermined the UN Resolutions to which they were party by secretly engaging in economic and even military interaction with South Africa. For instance, for the period 1966-1972, between 60 and 70 per cent of South Africa's total trade with South America consisted of imports. The average total trade per year for the said period amounted to a meagre R28 million, namely, R18 million in imports and R10 million in exports. By 1985 this pattern had changed as South Africa was importing R444 million of goods from South America.[17] It is notable that this increase in trade volume between South Africa and South America coincided with the height of international sanctions and disinvestment campaigns against the former. The long-standing South African government position towards South America was that an investment in South America would be to South Africa's advantage, not only in terms of economic development for the country but also to gain the favour of these countries so that they would support South Africa during the UN's debates on issues pertaining to South Africa. This was particularly important as the South American countries normally voted as a bloc and therefore South Africa's approach had to encompass the whole region.[18]

However, such support from the South American countries would not be sufficient, especially if the immediate neighbourhood was still extremely hostile. Thus, during the debate in Parliament on 27 March 1968, it was decided that South Africa would have to invest heavily in the friendly states in Africa, and that such investment should be in the form of loans at low interest rates and supporting viable development projects. Legislation was enacted creating a Loan Fund for the Promotion of Economic Co-operation. To this effect, an amount of R5 million, which was a budget surplus for the 1967-1968 financial year, was set aside for that purpose.[19] South Africa's overall trade over the period 1957-1967 had grown by only half a per cent.[20] In 1968 South Africa's imports from Africa amounted to R128 million, while exports were R248 million. In that specific year, trade with Africa, in value terms, surpassed

that of trade with Asia, North and South America. Exports to the whole of Asia were worth R235 million, while to North and South America, exports amounted to R137 million.[21]

Another more pressing issue which forced South Africa to heed the necessity of strengthening ties with its neighbourhood, was the increased expansion of communist presence in Africa. By March 1971, the Chinese and the Russians already had 10 000 technical advisors in Africa with a view to helping African countries recover from economic difficulties. At the same time, more than 15 000 African students were being trained in China and Russia. At that time, the main beneficiaries of communist involvement were Guinea, Burundi, Congo-Brazzaville, Uganda, Somalia and Tanzania. There were growing fears that the take-over of government by the communist-trained liberation movements in these countries would be replicated further south as a successful model.[22] It was therefore crucial for South Africa to create a *cordon sanitaire* by supporting countries such as Angola, Mozambique, Rhodesia and Botswana which would serve as growth points for a safe zone.[23] Thus South Africa sought to ensure its own national security by countering the economic insecurity of its immediate neighbours and those across the South Atlantic.

The suspension of South Africa's membership of the UN General Assembly was a *coup de grâce* in the history of its international relations. South Africa's Ambassador to the UN was recalled on 17 November 1974.[24] The suspension constituted the ultimate rejection of the country's political system and made it extremely difficult to conduct open international relations with other countries without such countries suffering collateral damage due to their association with a *pariah* state. Thus it was a costly enterprise, both in diplomatic, financial and security terms. Diplomatically, South Africa lost most of its existing and potential allies. Financially, by March 1976 – after nearly 30 years of UN membership, South Africa had already paid a total amount of R10 198 739,26 into the UN coffers. In addition to making contributions in support of specific UN operations such as the Task Force in the Middle East (UN Emergency Force - UNEF and UN Disengagement Observer Force - UNDOF), South Africa also made voluntary contributions to UN subsidiary organisations such as the UN Children's Fund (UNICEF) and the UN High Commissioner for Refugees (UNHCR).[25] In the security arena, South Africa suddenly could not openly declare some allies while the line between its traditional foes and potential new allies became blurred. This caused much unease and a sense of insecurity which only a change in the political system could resolve.

3.2 THE END OF SOUTH AFRICA'S *PARIAH* STATUS AND THE BEGINNING OF A NEW ERA

The advent of democracy in South Africa changed the international *pariah* status, thus ushering in a new era in the trans-Atlantic relations in the Southern cone. Marking this change in status were high-level state visits by senior government officials. The first visit to the Mercosur countries by a democratically-elected South African President was by Nelson Mandela when he was invited to address the Mercosur Heads of State Summit on 24 July 1998. He was the first head of state from outside Mercosur to be invited to address the Summit. In his address he emphasised the existence of "new conditions" which prevailed on both sides of the Atlantic. Having visited other regional organisations such as the Organisation of African Unity (OAU), the EU, the Caribbean Community and Common Market (CCCM), concluding with Mercosur, Mandela lamented the limited achievements of humanity in striving for peace and development, especially in the developing countries. Complimenting the efforts made by nations to ensure human security during the last decade of the twentieth century, he singled out the nations' determination to "pool their sovereignty in order to achieve together what cannot be achieved separately."[26] In this way, he was calling for states not to over-emphasise their sovereignty but to view security, economic growth and prosperity for their citizens as primary objectives of any government that is responsive to the citizens' needs.

According to Mandela, socio-economic co-operation would help strengthen the South and also form the basis for advancing a mutually beneficial partnership with the North. Through co-operation states would be able to face up to the challenges of development and peace which are beyond the capacity of one nation to tackle alone. He further highlighted South Africa's geostrategic position, which he thought has a potential of being a bridgehead between South America, East Asia and Africa.[27] Being the first speech by a South African head of state in South America since the advent of democracy in South Africa, it is notable that he dedicated a substantial portion of his speech to socio-economic, peace and security issues. This could have been the laying of a foundation for future co-operation on security issues that transcend national borders such as combating piracy at sea; narco-trafficking and abuse of the environment through nuclear testing and global warming. The other countries which have entered into almost similar bilateral arrangements of co-operation with Mercosur include Australia, Canada, New Zealand and the US. While these agreements are largely focused on

socio-economic co-operation, they also recognise the undeniable fact there can be no development without peace and security, thus hinting at the inconclusive nature of issues still to be covered in the future.[28]

With Mercosur being the world's fastest growing trading bloc and the world's third largest customs union, after NAFTA and the EU, the benefits that would accrue to South Africa for associating itself with such a giant are only too conspicuous to ignore. It is against this background that South Africa is attempting to secure a free trade agreement with Mercosur, almost along the same lines as the one with the EU which came into effect in January 2000.[29] However, South Africa will first have to become an associate member, like Bolivia and Chile. This could take a long time to materialise because of various factors, including different tariff structures and the question of incorporating SADC's interests in the agreement as well.[30]

The trade relations between South Africa and Mercosur have increased quite substantially since 1995. While the trade balance remains in favour of the Mercosur countries, particularly due to the disproportionate influence of Argentina and Brazil in the group, exports to, and imports from, the Mercosur group have grown since 1995 till 1997 by about 21.9 per cent and 20.4 per cent, respectively. If the associate members (Bolivia and Chile) are considered, the trade volume in exports and imports increases over the same period by 18.5 per cent and 20.9 per cent, respectively. However, the 1998 Asian crisis in financial markets wreaked havoc on Brazil and Argentina, the main trade partners in Mercosur. Consequently, there was a slump in trade volumes as from 1998 to 1999 (see Table 6). Compared with the 1997 figures, this decline in trade volume represents 12.9 per cent and 23.4 per cent less than the 1997 figures for imports and exports, respectively.

Table 6: SOUTH AFRICA'S TRADE TIES WITH THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES

Country	**1997**		**1998**		**1999**	
	Imports (Rm)	Exports (Rm)	Imports (Rm)	Exports (Rm)	Imports (Rm)	Exports (Rm)
Argentina	1 260.0	467.0	1 153.3	560.2	1 121.4	457.7
Brazil	1 500.0	1 391.0	1 272.3	1 088.3	1 376.1	947.5
Paraguay	9.0	54.9	17.6	65.1	15.5	33.1
Uruguay	57.2	39.0	41.6	113.2	35.4	51.4

MERCOSUR ***TOTAL***	***2 826.2***	***1 951.9***	***2 484.8 (-12.1%)***	***1 826.8 (-6.4%)***	***2 548.4 (-9.8%)***	***1 489.7 (-23.7%)***
Bolivia*	1.6	9.5	0.5	4.1	1.0	1.1
Chile*	247.0	263.1	149.4	291.2	129.9	213.2
GRAND TOTAL	***3 074.8***	***2 224.5***	***2 634.7 (-14.3%)***	**2 122.1 *(-4.6%)***	**2 679.3 *(-12.9%)***	**1 704.0 *(-23.4%)***

* Denotes 'associate members of Mercosur'

(%) Denotes decline in imports and exports since 1997.

Source: The South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA). 2000. ***South African Yearbook of International Affairs, 2000/01***. Johannesburg: SAIIA.

Foreign direct investment by the Mercosur countries in South Africa, and *vice versa*, gives a clear picture of mutual recognition and the need for closer co-operation (see Table 7). These investments are still largely in the indirect sphere, meaning they would use South Africa as a launch-pad to pursue their interests in the neighbouring countries. However, owing to South Africa's commitment to regional development, such indirect investments have positive spin-offs for the country as well, such as keeping economic migrants away, and creating viable markets for South African goods and services.

Table 7: FOREIGN INVESTMENT BETWEEN SOUTH AFRICA AND THE MERCOSUR, 1996 (US$m)

	SA Investment in Mercosur			**Mercosur Investment in SA**		
	Direct	Non-Direct	**Total**	Direct	Non-Direct	**Total**
Argentina	-	10	**10**	-	3	**3**
Brazil	-	9	**9**	1	6	**7**
Paraguay	-	1	**1**	-	1	**1**
Uruguay	-	-	**-**	-	1	**1**
Total	**-**	**20**	**20**	**1**	**11**	**12**

Source: Mills, G. & Mutschler, C. (eds.) 1999. ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: The South African Institute for International Affairs (SAIIA).

Since former President Mandela's visit to South America, which culminated in his address to the Mercosur summit, there have been frequent exchanges of high-level delegations by South Africa and Mercosur members. His successor, President Thabo Mbeki, was also invited to address the Mercosur summit on 15 December 2000. Like his predecessor, President Mbeki emphasised the importance of building and strengthening the strategic alliance between the two entities. Unlike his predecessor, Mbeki viewed such a partnership between South Africa

and the Mercosur countries in the context of South-South relations and the need to exert pressure on the North to accept responsibility for some of the socio-economic ills that are being experienced by the South. To this effect he called for solidarity in the attempt to restructure the world economic order. He posited that this would be done through negotiating for the rebalancing of world trade agreements and international financial systems that are tilted in favour of the North. Like Mandela, but in a much more explicit manner, Mbeki indicated that trans-Atlantic co-operation should not be viewed as being limited to trade and investment issues only, but as including such crucial aspects as conflict resolution and prevention, peacekeeping operations, namely, the security dimension; and the reform of international institutions of governance like the UN.[31]

3.3 RELATIONS WITH INDIVIDUAL COUNTRIES

Despite the discrepancy in the manner in which South American countries dealt with South Africa, especially prior to 1994, an analysis of relations of individual countries now constituting Mercosur with South Africa, reveals a selective approach. Put differently, while denouncing South Africa's internal political system, most countries in South America changed their foreign policies in respect of South Africa in accordance with their immediate national interests. Similarly, South Africa's relations with the individual countries have evolved in a chequered manner, namely, its foreign policy towards these countries vacillated from friendship to mild animosity as the situation dictated at the time.[32]

3.3.1 Argentina

The relations between South Africa and Argentina can be traced back to the arrival in Argentina of three groups of white Afrikaans-speaking people — called Boers — between 1902 and 1905. It was just after the Anglo-Boer War (1899-1902) that these groups settled in Comodoro Rivadavia, Chubut Province in Patagonia. Ever since their migration to Argentina, the Boer community has multiplied and continues to practise their South African cultures, including speaking Afrikaans. In 1960 the South African government established an Honorary Consulate in Comodoro Rivadavia. This community's contribution to the economic and military security of Argentina has been significant since its arrival. They are even said to have participated in the Falklands/Malvinas War of 1982 on the side of Argentina against the British.[33]

The foundation established by these socio-economic and cultural ties between South Africa and Argentina, was never solid and the relations have since the 1960s been marred by the inconsistency caused by successive military governments in Argentina. As Tulchin[34] aptly puts it, "Argentina … changed foreign policies and its posture on international issues more frequently than Diego Maradona scored goals." The imports from Argentina as a percentage of the total imports from South America for the period 1966-1985 averaged about 18 per cent per year.[35] However, as Table 6 indicates, by 1997 South Africa's exports to Argentina stood at R1 260 million and imports R467 million, thus representing a 16.1 per cent and 12.2 per cent increase from 1995. In 1997 Argentina was South Africa's 27th largest export market, while South Africa was Argentina's 21st largest export destination.[36]

When Raúl Alfonsín became President of Argentina on 10 December 1983, one of his priorities was to position the country in the international arena. To this effect he severed diplomatic ties with South Africa in 1986. This was due to latter's internal political situation and international *pariah* status. President Alfonsín was keen to win greater international acceptability and is said to have aspired to become the leader of the Non-Aligned Movement (NAM). Thus he concluded that winning the hearts of the Third World countries would require that he ostracised South Africa. Furthermore, disengaging from South Africa would not only help endear him (and Argentina) in the eyes of the international community but would also ensure support (in the form of votes) at the UN, especially with regard to the Falklands/Malvinas question. However, President Carlos Saúl Menem reversed this situation when he took power in July 1989. President Menem deemed the severance of diplomatic relations with South Africa a 'political error'. It was only in January 1992 that an Argentinean ambassador presented his credentials to then President F.W. de Klerk.[37] In this way, one of Mercosur's economic giants had joined the international community in re-admitting South Africa to the international fold as the latter's internal political situation was improving. Nelson Mandela, who later became president of South Africa, had just been released, political parties had been unbanned, and a serious political dialogue was underway in the form of the Convention for a Democratic South Africa (CODESA).

In a process which Leysens calls a "new outward movement", there is renewed enthusiasm in cementing ties between South Africa and Argentina.[38] This policy is predicated on strengthening economic ties as the significance of the military has receded in both countries.

Hampering these efforts have been the creation of trading blocs with strong protectionist tendencies. While Mercosur was initially fairly protectionist in its approach, it has realised that it cannot achieve much without involving countries in the South as well. There is also a realisation that all the countries in the Global South occupy an inferior position in the pyramid of nations in the global political economy, and also with regard to the four primary power structures, namely, security, production, finance and knowledge.[39]

The democratisation processes in both Argentina and South Africa have borne fruit in many respects. As in South Africa, the international community has accepted the irreversible nature of democratic transition in Argentina and, accordingly, rewarded it with favourable terms for the refinancing of foreign debt. International lending agencies have also acknowledged the economic liberalisation taking place within Mercosur, especially Argentina, which is complying with the renowned 'good governance' or 'second-generation reform' conditionality clauses. As a group, Mercosur has also introduced democracy as a prerequisite for membership. These conditions help generate economic prosperity and reduce the socio-economic plight of citizens, thus reducing the probability of returning to military or autocratic rule.[40]

The need for a politically stable and economically growing democracy is illustrated by the role of Brazil within the group in fostering relations across the South Atlantic sub-region. During his visit to Argentina in July 1998, President Mandela witnessed the signing of a number of agreements among the Mercosur member states which provided strategic lesson for the Southern African sub-region generally, and South African in particular. However, the most important of these agreements, from a global peace and democratic perspective, was the Democratic Protocol of Ushuaia. The Protocol — popularly known as the Democratic Clause — prohibits "the participation in the bloc by countries in which the constitutional order is violated".[41] The signing of the Protocol was a culmination of the process initiated at the San Luis Summit (in Argentina) in 1996, following General Lino Oviedo's threat of carrying out a *coup d'tat* against the democratically government of President Juan Carlos Wasmosy of Paraguay. The Mercosur countries were unequivocal in condemning General Oviedo's plans and they stated that they would impose sanctions on Paraguay and its membership to Mercosur would be terminated if he went ahead with the *coup*.[42] It was only a few months after the signing of the Protocol that it was put to test during the assassination of Paraguay's

Vice-President Luis Maria Argaña, in March 1999. At that stage the country was facing a real possibility of a civil war when the Mercosur countries boldly and unflinchingly acted in averting the imminent disaster. This resulted in the resignation of President Raúl Cubas after he was implicated in the assassination and the subsequent installation of Luis González Macchi as the new president.[43]

The signing of the Protocol happened while the then President of South Africa, Nelson Mandela, was still in Argentina. During his visit he signed three bilateral agreements between South Africa and the Mercosur countries, namely, on combating drug-trafficking; reciprocal investment promotion and protection to encourage greater investment flows between the two countries; and on consultations about 'issues of common interest'. The other agreements signed by the Mercosur countries during a similar occasion, excluding the Democratic Protocol of Ushuaia, were the following:[44]

- *Consumer protection*. In terms of this agreement, member states undertook to abide by a single consumer protection code, particularly with regard to health products, combating abusive clauses in contracts, and unfair competition.

- *Gaming laws.* Member states undertook to conduct studies towards a common rule for raffles, lotteries, competitions and telemarketing.

- *Services.* Member states undertook to liberalise their markets and provide lists of proposals for 'united services'. This was to be done in a phased manner, namely, according to each country's level of readiness with regard to liberalisation.[45]

These agreements signal a higher degree of commitment to regional co-operation which is still absent in the SADC. By becoming an associate member of Mercosur, South Africa would be able to link up to these agreements in a manner that is tailor-made for its conditions, especially taking cognisance of unique conditions and needs of Southern African countries.

3.3.2 Brazil

The strategic value of Brazil to South Africa was recognised by both countries early in the historical development of relations between the two. These relations were rooted in a number of commonalities and some mutually complementary differences in their national characters and natural resource endowment. However, as was the case with Argentina, the development of diplomatic relations between the two countries has been characterised by numerous hurdles, largely emanating from South Africa's previous political system and unacceptable racial policies.

3.3.2.1 *Historical development of relations*

There are striking commonalities between the historical development of the political systems of Brazil and South Africa. Both countries have experienced oppressive military or securocratic rule. Large-scale violation of human rights characterised such rule in both states. Some left-wing political parties were banned in South Africa and Brazil in 1960 and 1965, respectively. With the transition to multi-party democracy, both countries benefited from the visionary and reconciliatory leadership of Presidents Nelson Mandela and Fernando Henrique Cardoso of South Africa and Brazil, respectively, both coincidentally elected in 1994.[46] Given their bloody and divided past, both countries are still faced with a daunting task of national reconciliation and nation-building. The gap between the rich and poor remains one of the challenges facing the two countries. Brazil's Real Plan and South Africa's Reconstruction and Development Programme (RDP) and the Growth, Employment and Redistribution (GEAR) strategy, seek to address these socio-economic concerns. Brazil's linguistic and historic ties with Mozambique and, especially, Angola, and the mining and oil investments in the latter country, imply that South Africa and Brazil shared the concerns about the previous lack of peace and security in Angola.[47] Furthermore, both countries have a dominant status in their respective sub-regions (or areas of influence), in economic and military terms. They are also aspiring to greater political ambitions that include permanent membership to the reformed UN Security Council of the future.[48]

The historical ties between Southern Africa and Brazil are even more intriguing in many respects. Contrary to popular belief, Brazil made contact with Southern Africa even before Jan van Riebeeck set foot in the Cape. Salvador de Sá, Governor of Rio de Janeiro, sailed

from Brazil in 1648 to rescue Angola that was being attacked by the Dutch. After a successful mission he sailed back to Brazil. It was only four years later that Jan van Riebeeck arrived in the Cape. Even more intriguing is the fact that Riebeeck's father died in Brazil during the Dutch occupation and was buried in Pernambuco.[49]

The slave trade that characterised the economic activities of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries was responsible for a great number of Blacks (Negroes) who eventually became citizens of Brazil. The main sources of Negro slaves were Angola, the Kingdom of Congo and Sudan. [50] In 1822, the newly independent Brazilian nation only had about four million citizens. About 50 per cent of the citizens were slaves — both Brazilian-born slaves and those from Africa. In 1835, in the city of Salvador, the capital of the state of Bahia, about 26,5 per cent of the population were African slaves, 15,5 per cent Brazilian slaves, 7,1 per cent freed African, and 22,7 per cent freed Black Brazilians.[51]

During the period after the Anglo-Boer War up to 1922, trade relations between South Africa and Brazil were still mired in a controversy that largely emanated from General C.J. Smuts's negative perception of Brazil. The Brazilian government sent a cable message dated 16 January 1922 to General Smuts in connection with trade links. The Secretary to the Prime Minister of South Africa wrote to Owen Smith, the Commissioner of Customs and Excise (Cape Town), suggesting that a cable message be published detailing Brazil-South Africa trade relations. Dr Marais, South African Minister of Foreign Affairs, wrote to General Smuts informing him of the situation. For reasons known only to himself, General Smuts was not in favour of the appointment of a Consul-General representing Brazil in Cape Town. He therefore suggested in a telegram (dated 23 January 1922) that Dr Marais should not 'sanction' the appointment of such a Consul-General. Unfortunately, by that time a certain Senhor Paulo Semoro had already been appointed by the Brazilian government more than two years before (that is before 1920), but he had not yet assumed office, pending confirmation from the South African government. At that stage, H.W. Blackburn, who was already in Cape Town, continued to exercise the functions of Consul of Brazil, *albeit* informally. The international practice was (and still is) that appointments are made by the foreign government concerned and were only to be accepted by the Union government in this case.[52] From correspondence between General Smuts and his ministers, it appears that the former was not in favour of the appointment of any person or Consul-General from Brazil. While the Consul-

General was eventually appointed to Cape Town, it is also not clear if General Smuts's reluctance to accept a Consul-General from Brazil was reflective of strained political relations between the two countries at the time or whether it was based on other considerations. However, being a renowned internationalist, it is possible that General Smuts viewed such relations as premature or unsuitable for his plan at the time.

It was only in 1941 that South Africa started to vigorously pursue the process of appointing a Consul in Brazil. On 4 July 1941 General Smuts, who was the South African Prime Minister and Minister of External Affairs and of Defence, wrote to the British monarch requesting permission to appoint James Alexander Chapman (a British subject) as the Union Consul in Brazil to be based in Saõ Paulo and responsible for that region and other neighbouring regions. Chapman was eventually appointed as the Union Consul.[53] The British representatives in Saõ Paulo would work separately from the Union representative. Chapman, who would still be subordinate to the British Ambassador in Brazil, would be responsible for all Union needs except passport-related issues which would be referred to the British representatives. Chapman remained the honorary Union Consul in Brazil until 1944 and was re-appointed to the same position in 1947. The items most suitable for trade at the time from South Africa were dried fruit, wines and feathers, and from Brazil were timber, coffee and cocoa.[54]

It is undeniably true that despite the long historical ties between the two countries, Brazil's foreign policy has always been double-edged and ambiguous. On the one hand, Brazil politically denounced South Africa's political system of exclusion, but embraced trade relations on the other. By 1967, the trade balance between the two countries was 14 to 1 in Brazil's favour. It was only in the same year that South Africa – as a republic – opened a commercial office in Rio de Janeiro.[55] Since then relations between the two countries grew from strength to strength. Obviously, South Africa made more concessions to Brazil in strengthening the ties than *vice versa*. For instance, South Africa was offering generous bursaries for Brazilian students to study in South Africa. It was hoped that Brazil would reciprocate in kind.[56]

Brazil's foreign policy towards Africa has developed and matured over time. The Itamaraty (Brazil's Foreign Office) increasingly became determined to pursue its foreign policy towards Africa, irrespective of negative sensitivities especially from Washington. The apparent

crumbling of the Portuguese colonial empire in the mid-1970s enabled Brazil to develop strong diplomatic ties with Africa; improve links with oil-producing Arab countries; and also to play a significant role in regional affairs.[57] For Brazil the rationale for cementing ties with Africa in general, and South Africa in particular, was based on the following interests:

- An increase in trade relations involving, on a preferential basis, the barter of manufactured products for raw materials, destined for use in the new Brazilian industries, or the general expansion of all types of sales to new markets.

- Defence of national economic interests in the competition between commodities, notably coffee, cocoa, sugar, cotton, including an attempt to persuade the African states which are associated with the European Common Market to establish common preferential tariffs.

- The encouragement of solidarity between developing countries to make it possible to negotiate as a group with the developed countries, in order to reverse unfavourable trade terms and gain other economic concessions claimed by the Group of 77.

- Preservation of the Portuguese language and culture in Africa, to serve as a facilitating factor towards a future Brazilian presence on the African continent.

- The growth of national prestige as a leader among developing countries, an emerging medium power, utilising the projected image of a civilisation that is pacific, multiracial, and a model of tropical industrialisation.

- The exchange of technical know-how in fields such as nuclear energy, tropical medicine, tropical agriculture, civil aviation, architecture and road construction.[58]

Viewed from the South African perspective these areas of interests are important and there is a symbiotic relationship from which both states benefit.

3.3.2.2 *Current relations*

The current state of socio-economic relations between the two countries was initiated on 2 September 1991 when the Chairman of the Brazilian Group in Latin American Parliament, Congressman Ney Lopes, proposed to the Congress that economic sanctions against South Africa be lifted. He also proposed that a Brazilian Ambassador be appointed in Pretoria. He argued that Brazil was going to lose out on the South African market as many other countries

were lifting sanctions. President Fernando Collor de Mello subsequently visited South Africa from 8 to 14 September 1991. Following Lopes' advice, the Sarney Decree No. 91524 of 9 August 1985 was rescinded on 17 January 1992. In terms of that announcement by the Brazilian government, normal "scientific, cultural and sporting links with South Africa" would be resumed.[59] The UN embargoes on arms and petroleum remained in place.

Despite the relative increase of trade links between Brazil and South Africa, the personality factor has on numerous occasions almost derailed trans-Atlantic co-operation. For instance, former President Collor threatened to delink Brazil from the Third World, arguing that "it is better to be the last country of the First World than the first country in the Third."[60] However, this never happened and his successor, Fernando Henrique Cardoso, strengthened socio-economic and diplomatic ties with Africa. In fact, when South Africa was readmitted into the international family of nations, it identified twelve strategic partners, one of which was Brazil — the only one in South America.[61]

As from 1994, Brazil became South Africa's biggest trading partner in South America and one of the largest in the Southern Hemisphere. While the bilateral trade figures between Brazil and South Africa reached R2 billion, by 1995 Brazil's share of South Africa's export market in South America was already over 50 per cent. During the same year South Africa enjoyed a trade surplus with Brazil, despite the sheer size and diversity of Brazilian economy — the state of São Paulo has a GDP that is larger than that of the whole of South Africa.[62]

The visit of the Brazilian Foreign Minister, Luiz Felipe Lampreia, to South Africa in May 1995, paved the way for the later visit of President Cardoso which took place on 26 November 1996. Lampreia's brief was reportedly to conduct exploratory talks with South Africa. Given the fact that South Africa would like to entrench and market its regionalist foreign policy and has a strong European tradition, and that Brazil would like to be associated positively with the Indian Ocean Rim, Lampreia was reportedly instructed to investigate how Brazil could forge meaningful ties with South Africa with the possibility of extending such ties to involve Mercosur and SADC.[63] Of course, this was a mammoth task. When President Cardoso eventually visited South Africa, he stated unequivocally that his visit was aimed at strengthening socio-economic co-operation between the two countries. While the visit was largely for economic purposes, Cardoso indicated that he also wanted to cement political ties.

The kind of co-operation he sought with South Africa was to be in all fields of human endeavour but particularly culture, air services and anti-drug trafficking.[64] During his visit the following agreements were finalised:

- Bilateral Air Services Agreement.
- Control of Narcotics Agreement.
- Cultural Co-operation Agreement.
- The exchange of Notes for the reciprocal lifting of visas for tourism and business purposes for all categories of passports (not exceeding 90 days).
- The Presidential Declaration between South Africa and Brazil.[65]

For the first time in the history of Brazil-South Africa relations, a career diplomat was appointed as ambassador to South Africa in April 1996. Ambassador Otto A. Maia was appointed with the rank of Under Secretary-General, the highest ever appointment to a diplomatic post by Brazil to any African country.[66]

As already indicated, former President Mandela had reciprocated the visit in 1998 which included the signing on 21 July 1998 of the so-called Mandela-Cardoso Memorandum of Understanding Concerning Consultations on Issues of Common Interest. On 21 October 1998, a Declaration of Intent on Land Policy was signed between Brazil and South Africa. The other agreements that were to receive attention were, *inter alia*, those concerning Technical Co-operation; Avoidance of Double Taxation; and Promotion and Reciprocal Protection of Investments.[67] President Mandela's successor, Thabo Mbeki, also made a follow-up visit to Brazil from 12-15 December 2000, which culminated in his address to the Mercosur Heads of States Summit. In their bilateral deliberations, the two presidents concluded that both countries are facing almost similar circumstances and challenges. To this effect they signed an agreement establishing a Joint Commission which would focus on the following areas of interest: trade, investment, human resource development and health co-operation. This was viewed as a basis for integration of the economies of Mercosur and South Africa.[68] Other issues that enjoyed their attention included international security issues such as drug-trafficking and the trade in small arms.[69]

The symbiotic link between Brazil's involvement in South Africa and Southern Africa is further accentuated because the latter is expected to maximally utilise the former's involvement in the sub-region even if such involvement is not in South Africa. For instance, the involvement of the two major Brazilian construction companies — Mendes Júnior and Odebrecht — which built a huge Campanda hydroelectric plant in Angola in 1992, rely on South Africa being prepared to consume substantial energy. According to the former Brazilian ambassador to Namibia in 1991, Mario Augusto Santos, it was envisaged that a strong partnership involving Brazil, Angola, Namibia and South Africa would be established. He further demonstrated South Africa's indispensability if Brazil is to become meaningfully involved in the sub-region.[70]

3.3.3 Paraguay

Historically, political, economic and social relations between Paraguay and South Africa have never been a priority for both countries. Like some South American countries, Paraguay never severed political (diplomatic) and economic ties with South Africa, even at the height of international condemnation of the southern African state. Various heads of state and senior ranking officials from South Africa continued to pay official visits to Paraguay.[71] This was not a demonstration by South Africa of any intrinsic value that she attached to that country as such, but because it enabled her to counter international isolation. However, with the formation of Mercosur, following the signing of the Treaty of Asunción in Asunción — the capital of Paraguay — this situation changed. Relations changed from those based on symbolism to those of realism. Despite the country's small geographic size, its partnership with such countries as Argentina and Brazil in Mercosur, makes Paraguay an invaluable strategic partner with a view to accessing Mercosur's massive market. It also has the potential to serve as a launching-pad for South Africa's economic operations in the neighbouring countries.[72]

3.3.4 Uruguay

Like Paraguay, Uruguay never severed, but scaled down, political (diplomatic) and economic ties with South Africa during the apartheid era. However, it was only in 1991 that the Uruguayan government, which had been inaugurated in March 1990, decided to establish a

full diplomatic mission in Pretoria. It is generally believed that, from both Uruguay's and South America's perspective, the main rationale for cementing diplomatic ties with South Africa stemmed from the desire to secure the African vote in international forums and also to be in the same camp as the Third World countries. This is particularly important in organisations such as the UN and the Latin American Group (GRULA), where member states have to vote and support positions *en bloc*. Favourable political and economic ties facilitate a positive inclination from member states if certain positions are to be adopted. Uruguay is known for her extremely advanced financial system unparalleled in the whole of South America — hence its popularity as "the Switzerland of Latin America".[73] Thus South Africa can capitalise on the skills-transfer programmes that could be entered into with Uruguay. Being the administrative capital of Mercosur, Uruguay presents a unique opportunity to influence and gain concessions from other Mercosur partners.

3.3.5 Bolivia and Chile

Both countries — Bolivia and Chile — but especially the latter, have maintained close relations with South Africa even during the time of isolation. For a long period Chile was under military rule and therefore suffered international isolation just like South Africa. Given their similar international status, it was prudent for Chile and South Africa to interact quite closely. Their interaction spanned across the full spectrum of areas of mutual benefit, including trade, defence and diplomatic relations. It is also notable that in both countries (Chile and South Africa) the democratisation process commenced in earnest in the early 1990s. Chile had always been represented by a *charge d'affaires* in South Africa, until President Patricio Aylwin (1990-1994) upgraded diplomatic representation to Pretoria to ambassadorial level.[74] Subsequently, in January 1995, the Chilean Minister of the Economy, Dr Alvaro Garía, led a high-powered delegation to South Africa. The visit paved the way for the official visit of the Chilean President and strengthened the already existing ties, especially in the mining, manufacturing and forestry sectors.[75]

It was only with the state visit by the first democratically elected Chilean President Eduardo Frei Ruiz-Tagle to South Africa that a new chapter in the political relations between the two countries was opened. President Frei has always emphasised co-operation between the two countries, not so much for security-related challenges, but with a view to increasing trade,

development and direct investment. Like all other statesmen, President Frei maintains that the bilateral relations between Chile and South Africa should encompass all facets of human endeavour.[76] As a stable and developing economy, Chile has succeeded in ensuring the economic security of its citizens both by diversifying her export destinations and strategically associating itself with winning successful regional groupings such as APEC, Mercosur and NAFTA. As much as membership of too many organisations could compound the process of standardisation and designing of suitable economic policies that are in accordance with regulations of different organisations, it enables Chile to extract advantages without being entangled in the intricacies of being a full member. It is against this background that South Africa is seeking to link up with the Mercosur members both at bilateral and multilateral levels. Overlapping membership helps cast the safety net much wider, thus providing a comprehensive security framework for dealing with security threats across the whole spectrum.

Unlike Chile, Bolivia maintained low-profile relations with South Africa, especially during the period of isolation. However, with the reinsertion of South Africa into the international community the Bolivian government has shown strong support for strengthening ties with South Africa. Being a small country with limited resources, Bolivia has not succeeded in elevating relations to ambassadorial level. It is, however, envisaged that when Bolivia becomes a full member of Mercosur, as it is of the Andean Community (AC), it will play an important role in bridging the interaction between the AC and Mercosur, which will benefit South Africa. In addition to that, it has substantial natural gas reserves which may require South African technology and expertise to optimally exploit in terms of exports to Brazil and other members of Mercosur.[77]

The relations between South Africa and the countries currently constituting (or associated with) Mercosur have vast potential for having a positive and negative impact on SADC. This is particularly important in the context that South Africa is a dominant member of SADC, and therefore any bilateral trade or security agreement with any non-SADC member(s) could have far-reaching consequences for the sub-regional organisation. Thus, it is crucial that South Africa-Mercosur talks should include the dimension of inter-regional co-operation, namely, linking up both Mercosur and SADC, with South Africa playing a facilitating role.

4. INTER-REGIONAL CO-OPERATION: MERCOSUR AND SADC

The ultimate need for co-operation between the two sub-regional organisations — Mercosur and SADC — cannot be over-emphasised. This stems from the reality that any gains that could accrue to South Africa due to successful interaction with Mercosur or its members would be negated by the adverse effect that such interaction might have on the southern African sub-region. However, South Africa's first priority is to confront some contentious issues pertaining to its strategic orientation *vis-à-vis* Africa and sensitivities regarding its 'big-brother' image.

4.1 THE DEBATE ON SOUTH AFRICA'S STRATEGIC ORIENTATION

Despite pronouncements indicating the contrary, South Africa is faced with a real dilemma of political orientation which affects its socio-economic power base. The debate, which began after South Africa's readmission to the international community in the early 1990s, revolves around the strategic orientation of its foreign policy, that is, whether it should be directed towards the rich Global North and Asia or towards the poor Global South. Some analysts argue that with the demise of the former Soviet Union and apartheid, there is a conscious effort to de-ideologise international relations. Based on this understanding, South Africa should actively participate in the globalisation process by penetrating global markets and gaining a competitive edge. Others believe that solidarity with the poor South is more appropriate, given South Africa's recent past where the poor nations of the world helped fight for its liberation. Thus, contrary to those who take a global view, or globalists, this group posits that South Africa should adopt a strong regionalist approach which seeks to improve regional economic development and political solidarity, irrespective of the challenges of globalisation. While a globalist approach would imply that South Africa should be cautious in participating in such groupings as the Group of 77, the regionalists advocate a strong involvement and even playing a leading role in NAM and developing the African continent, especially SADC.[78]

The globalism–regionalism debate is particularly important as it could determine the extent to which South Africa would be prepared to engage its trans-Atlantic neighbours in support of

projects to develop the Southern African sub-region. The development of the sub-region implies less dependence on South Africa and less pressure on the latter's resources due to economic refugees migrating southwards. However, South Africa has already decided that it would apply a 'butterfly approach', but simultaneously seek to uplift the continent and the sub-region. The imaginary body of the butterfly is clearly oriented north-south to the EU and North America, along the axis of South Africa's traditional trading and investment flows, and its wings extending laterally to South American markets and those of Asia. The South Africa-EU agreement was an unambiguous demonstration of this thinking.[79]

While individual countries in the South Atlantic endeavour to augment co-operation on a bilateral basis, it is equally crucial that they keep their immediate sub-regional neighbours in mind. All efforts by South Africa to engage Mercosur should concurrently include an inter-regional agenda. Therefore, for every political and economic deal struck between these entities, South Africa should consider the potential impact of such a deal on the sub-region. Both the Asunción Treaty and the SADC Treaty make provision for interaction with extra-regional entities, provided such interaction is not prejudicial to the organisation's goals.[80]

4.2 MERCOSUR AND SADC: A COMPARATIVE PERSPECTIVE

Comparing the level of focus on development which is displayed by Mercosur and SADC, Alec Erwin, the South African Minister of Trade and Industry, expressed concern that the latter organisation was originally established for socio-economic development of the region but it is "pre-occupied with military conflict at the expense of its ostensible goal of economic union and progress."[81] Erwin was accentuating the inextricable link between economic development, peace and security. While South Africa recognises the significance of SADC in geographic terms, it is also conscious of the fact that the latter cannot be a means of the former's economic salvation. It is against this background that South African trade policy is driven by the so-called 'trade butterfly' approach. South Africa has adopted a regional approach to development in realising that, as former Foreign Minister Alfred Nzo aptly put it, it "cannot be an island of prosperity surrounded by a sea of poverty."[82] President Mbeki has on numerous occasions demonstrated his commitment to alleviating the socio-economic plight of African people by engaging and challenging the international financial and trade regimes which militate against development in Africa. On numerous occasions Erwin and Lampreia have publicly called for a closer co-operation between SADC and Mercosur.

However, there is always a realisation that this is easier said than done. A tariff agreement between Mercosur and the SADC will not easily be reached.[83] Despite criticism from some cynics, South Africa has negotiated trade deals with this in mind. Trans-Atlantic relations in the Southern Cone should be geared towards assisting to achieve that goal.

SADC comprises 14 countries (Angola, Botswana, the DRC, Lesotho, Malawi, Mauritius, Mozambique, Namibia, the Seychelles, South Africa, Swaziland, Tanzania, Zambia and Zimbabwe) while Mercosur only has four member states. In addition to the huge differences in terms of population and territorial sizes, the performance of Mercosur far outstrips that of SADC (see Table 8). In 1999 trade activity within Mercosur stood at 20 per cent compared with 5-6 per cent in SADC. Some analysts posit that SADC is bound to fail given the number of member states which are amongst the least developed in the world, operating with shoe-string budgets incapable of servicing external debt (in 1996 the average debt burden as a percentage of GDP was 50 per cent for SADC, compared with 28 per cent for Mercosur) and providing basic services to citizens; plagued with protracted and almost intractable intra-state conflicts; and having a legacy of poor governance. These conditions no longer apply in the Mercosur group as the democratisation process is now firmly entrenched, sub-regional rivalries have receded, and the economic growth rates of member states are impressive. There

Table 8: COMPARISON BETWEEN MERCOSUR AND SADC

	Area (million km^2)	**Population (millions)**	**GDP in 1996 (US$ bn)**	**Ave Annual % Increase in Real GDP (1990-1995)**
SADC	9.2	186	178	1.3
SADC excl. South Africa	8	148	51	2.3
Mercosur	11.9	207	1230	3.3
Mercosur plus associated members	13.8	229	1313	3.5
Mercosur excl. Brazil	3.4	44	349	4.9
European Union	3.2	372	8093	n/a

n/a = Not available

Source: Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. 1999. (eds.) ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA).

is a conspicuously disproportionate influence of South Africa and Brazil with their contributions in 1996 to regional GDPs amounting to 71 per cent and 72 per cent, respectively. The average annual economic growth rate of Mercosur is about twice as high as that of SADC. The GDP of SADC is almost one-fifth of the GDP of Mercosur, while the *per capita* income of SADC is less by one-third.[84]

4.3 CHALLENGES AND PROSPECTS FOR INTER-REGIONAL CO-OPERATION

There are sensitivities about South Africa's 'big brother' image, both on the sub-region and the African region. While neighbouring states appreciate the positive role played by South Africa in contributing towards regional development and integration, they resent the fact that interaction between SADC and other sub-regions or regions is viewed mainly in terms of South Africa's involvement. For instance, more than 80 per cent of trade between SADC and Mercosur is attributed to the involvement of South Africa. In 1996 SADC's exports to Mercosur amounted to US$722 million and imports US$667 million. Thus, the only true potential partner with the Mercosur group is South Africa.[85]

The question occasionally arises whether South Africa should be concerned about being perceived as a 'big brother', regardless of resentment and jealousy from the sub-region. During the Mercosur-SADC conference on regional integration in the South that was held in Cape Town on 26 October 1998, Guillermo Mondimo, the Director of Argentina's Mediterranean Foundation, posed the question: "Why isn't South Africa leading the process and setting parameters towards integration of the regional economy?" He further asked, "Is South Africa feeling guilty for being rich? You have to lead your neighbours to (help them) get wealthy. The SADC should join forces and use the Rand (as a common regional currency). Then you could use the revenue generated on member states' reserves and share it among countries adopting the Rand."[86] These sentiments seem to be prevalent among observers from outside the sub-region. South Africa's economic and political security are inextricably linked to that of the sub-region and therefore it is imperative that something is done to uplift the region for South Africa's own benefit. However, issues of territorial integrity, national sovereignty and non-interference in the internal affairs of another country come to the fore and thus obscure opportunities beyond such issues. This is partly attributable to the fact that some governments in the sub-region are insecure because of either having come to power through military *coups*, rigging the election results, or winning with a

perilously slim margin. It could also be attributed to the fact that South Africa, as a new democracy and therefore relatively new in the international relations arena, could not be seen as assuming leadership of a collection of states which are led by seasoned, tried-and-tested statesmen who, for many years, represented regional interests in international fora and organisations.

Further compounding the challenge of proper co-operation between the two blocs is the fact that both are still grappling with the modalities of either including new members (especially in the case of Mercosur) or to accommodate bilateral agreements that do not include all the members of the group (such as the South Africa-EU Agreement). Mercosur is attempting to gather Bolivia, Chile and Venezuela under its umbrella. It is also involved with the discussions on the American Free Trade Area (AFTA); it is conducting negotiations with the EU in the framework of the agreement signed in 1995; and at the same time maintaining the dialogue with the ANZERTA (Australia/New Zealand Closer Economic Relations Trade Agreement).[87] However, it already has preferential trade links with NAFTA, the AC and the EU.

While Mercosur still aspires to have strong relations with other regional blocs and to strengthen South-South trade, South Africa boasts of its geostrategic position which is suited to furthering Mercosur's ideal of creating a bridge which joins South America, Southern Africa and Asia.[88] Both Mercosur and South Africa have gained substantial experience during their respective involvement in protracted FTA negotiations with organisations such as the EU and NAFTA. Given that both South Africa and Brazil, a dominant member of Mercosur, are extremely sensitive to socio-economic issues such as unemployment, development and combating poverty, it can be expected that increased economic interaction between the two countries will be characterised by sensitivity to the side-effects of a mutual opening up of markets for certain industries. Their individual experiences — South Africa and the EU with regard to specific agricultural products, and Argentina and Brazil with regard to the automotive industry — should help them design a people-friendly accord. The urgency in concluding such an FTA is further justified due to the collapse of the World Trade Organisation ministerial meeting in 1999, as the EU members refused to compromise on the question of subsidising agricultural products. It is therefore imperative to open new markets and strengthen trade relations across the South Atlantic.[89]

As much as South Africa is eager to ensure stronger trade relations with the North due to the latter's buying power and considerable market, there is general concurrence that relations with the South will be even more beneficial in terms of long-term strategic, economic and political goals. Not only are the distances shorter to countries in the South, but there is also congruence and mutual understanding of one another's challenges. Co-operation between SADC and Mercosur would help ensure lifting the standard of living of citizens and thus more peace and stability will prevail as fewer people will be faced with basic challenges of survival.[90] By the end of 2001 there was still no formal trade arrangement or agreement between SADC and Mercosur. The only semi-official interaction between SADC and Mercosur, as sub-regional organisations, was the conference co-sponsored by the members of Mercosur and SADC, and hosted by the South African Institute for International Affairs (SAIIA), in Johannesburg, from 27 to 28 October 1998. The theme of the conference was "Mercosur/Mercosul and SADC: Regional Integration in the South".[91] Thus, trans-Atlantic business transactions or foreign investments are conducted by private entrepreneurs outside the formal framework provided by government. This excludes bilateral agreements that exist between the countries on both sides of the South Atlantic Ocean.[92]

However, it is also for instance in the area of organised crime where both sub-regions and individual countries could co-operate fruitfully. The concept of 'organised crime', as seen by the South African Police Service (SAPS), refers to "a well-organised and structured group with a clear leadership corps, which is involved in different criminal activities such as drug trafficking, vehicle theft or money laundering. Such syndicates have well-established contacts with national and international criminal organisations, cartels or mafia groupings."[93] For ensuring successful operation, organised criminal syndicates, including those in South Africa, share some common characteristics, which include the following:

- a hierarchy of control, with clearly designated systems of promotion and payment;
- sophisticated procedures, often *via* legitimate business interests, to launder money obtained by means of illegal activities; and
- the use of weapons to ensure that 'business' routes are protected and potential competitors eliminated.[94]

The need to use weapons is particularly prevalent amongst drug-traffickers and South Africa is extremely vulnerable to this criminal activity, especially since the advent of democracy. It is against this background that a brief analysis of drug-trafficking and its links with the South American countries is warranted.

5. DRUG-TRAFFICKING ACROSS THE SOUTH ATLANTIC OCEAN

As already indicated, the readmission of South Africa into the international fold resulted in an unprecedented influx of foreigners, with both *bona fide* and *mala fide* intentions. At the time when there were concerns about increased vulnerability to espionage (internal and external), there were also concerns about the possibility of increased organised criminal activity, characterised by being more transnational and difficult to detect. There is sufficient evidence to demonstrate that the increase in organised criminal activity is particularly prevalent during periods of political transition. South Africa was no exception to the rule. For instance, during the demise of communist rule and the collapse of the East Bloc, there were literally thousands of criminal organisations that mushroomed, involving current and former members of the security establishment.[95] Even though South Africa had a limited exposure to drug-trafficking during the apartheid years, periodic gang fights erupted in the Western Cape due to competition for clients for drugs and protection of 'business' routes. As the new political dispensation was introduced, South African borders became even more porous, thus resulting in relatively easy shipment of drugs in and out of the country. This coincided with a serious clampdown on drug-traffickers elsewhere, especially in North America and Europe. Consequently, the Southern African sub-region became a favourite 'trade' route, linking the Far and Middle East, the Americas and Europe. Making it even more lucrative was the fact that trans-shipment in South Africa could be conducted by sea, land or air. It was against this background that South Africa, in particular, obtained the dubious recognition of having an organised crime problem second only to Columbia and Russia. During the pre-1994 period, mandrax was South Africa's number one hard drug, followed by cannabis. In the post-1994 period, cocaine became the most popular hard drug.[96]

By 1998, the SAPS estimated that South Africa was home to approximately 192 organised crime syndicates and only 96 were under police surveillance. About 96 of these syndicates specialised in drug-trafficking, while 83 concentrated on vehicle-related crimes, and 60 were involved in commercial crime or any combination of these.[97] To deal with these syndicates

the SAPS initiated a number of projects with a view to devising specific counter-measures for specific types of organised crime (see Table 9).

Table 9: SAPS PROJECTS ON ORGANISED CRIME, MARCH 1997

Category of Organised Crime	Number of Projects
Drugs	37
Vehicles	18
Endangered Species	3
Diamonds and Gold	15
Firearms	9
Commercial Crime	6
Taxi Violence	5
Corruption	8
Highjackings of Freight	3
Armed Robbery	2
Gang-related Violence	1
Housebreaking	1
TOTAL	**108**

Source: Shaw, M. 1998. "Organised Crime in Post-Apartheid South Africa." ***Occasional Paper No. 28,*** Institute for Security Studies, January, pp. 1-2.

Thus, drug-trafficking remains one of the greatest challenges ever to confront the law enforcement agencies in South Africa. This cannot be dealt a severe and decisive blow unless there is co-operation with the countries across the South Atlantic, which are the main source of drugs flooding the globe today.

There seems to be a correlation between the incidence of drug-related crime and the geographical position of the Western Cape Province, in relation to the main sources of drugs, namely, the South American countries. In South Africa, some of the biggest drug busts have occurred on the West Coast. For instance, on 20 July 2001, 116 kg of cocaine, worth R250 million, was seized from a Maltese-registered cargo ship in Saldanha Bay. The ship was bound for China from Argentina.[98] Less than a month later (2 August 2001), another ship carrying 155 kg of cocaine worth an estimated R325 million — the biggest quantity ever

seized in a single police operation — was searched by the South African Police Service. That ship, *Anangel Destiny*, had left the Brazilian port, Porta da Madeira, on 17 July and was bound for China. The search-and-seizure operation required that a special police task team be constituted, comprising organised crime detectives, border police, the airwing, along with police and navy divers, customs officials and a police sniffer dog.[99] While the significance of these seizures cannot be overemphasised, especially with regard to breaking the backbones of transnational drug cartels, such seizures also have a serious side-effect on the general safety of the community. Drugs busts usually result in limited supplies of drugs and therefore spark gang wars as drug-lords have to fight for limited stock and space to sell. This has been characteristic of the gang wars that have ravaged the Cape Flats in the Western Cape, particularly during the period when the SAPS was making progress in combating illicit drug-trafficking.[100]

South Africa and the South American countries, especially those now constituting Mercosur, still have much to do in the area of combating drug-trafficking. The drug industry, which is reputed to be worth about R1,2-trillion or US$150-billion in global retail sales, cannot be destroyed single-handedly.[101] From a South African perspective, the situation is getting even more dire as a result of trans-Atlantic drug-trafficking. For instance, as at July 2001, there were 460 South Africans languishing in overseas jails, of whom 241 are related to drug-trafficking. South American countries alone hold about 110 (conservative figure) South Africans on drug-related charges. In Brazil and Peru, there are 56 South Africans who are suspected of being drug 'mules'.[102] Given these circumstances, it is crucial for countries on both sides of the South Atlantic to synergise in their efforts to weed out drug-trafficking. The US has a particular interest in these efforts as it remains the largest consumer of drugs, originating from South America, shipped through South Africa and landing up in the US in whatever form. Thus, in 2000 the US donated US$1,5-million to the South African drug-fighting effort. The US government increased the figure to US$2,2-million in 2001. Efforts of this nature are especially crucial as they have the potential to improve co-operation in other areas such as combating piracy on the high seas, illegal fishing and increasing foreign direct investment. These phenomena have a residual impact on security-related issues.

6. SOME BROAD SECURITY IMPLICATIONS

Following the discussion on the nature of socio-economic relations between South Africa/SADC and the Mercosur countries, the question could be asked: What are the direct security implications and how could the peace and security situation be improved on the basis of strong socio-economic ties?

Firstly, the current popular neo-liberalist paradigm that increased economic growth enables states to generate more funds for social spending, provides sufficient incentives for states to co-operate. This paradigm also emphasises the importance of the individual – hence individual security. Welfarist states, such as the Scandinavian countries, hardly ever have fundamental problems with their citizens, as social ills such as unemployment and lack of access to basic human needs (particularly the physiological needs in Maslow's hierarchy of needs) are adequately addressed. As the adage goes, 'A hungry man knows no boundaries'; therefore it is crucial that any national development strategy should incorporate the interests of the neighbours. For instance, the US had to bring Mexico on board through NAFTA, and the EU countries are currently grappling with ways and means of accommodating the countries from the former East Bloc in order to bring them on par with the EU in terms of economic development and democratic governance. Failure to do that would expose them to a multitude of social security threats emanating from these quarters. In this regard Papp[103] cites testimony provided by the seminal works of Quincy Wright and Ruth Leger Sivard. Wright concluded in 1942 that poorer states have the proclivity to initiate war or resort to violence. In this respect, Germany is the exception to rule in that it initiated war while it was an economically advanced state that had strong economic ties with its neighbours. Similarly, Sivard concluded that of the more than 120 instances of armed conflict in the period between 1955 and 1979, all but six involved developing countries. Aggression could be a response to frustration and relative deprivation. Frustrated by poverty, poor countries may be tempted to lash out at neighbours "to overcome a sense of impotence."[104] Former US Secretary for Defence, Robert S. McNamara observed in 1966 that "there is no question but that there is evidence of a relationship between violence and economic backwardness."[105]

Poverty could also generate internal political instability which may either spill over into neighbouring countries or cause an exodus of refugees, internally-displaced persons, or mass emigration. Large influxes of illegal immigrants or economic refugees are symptomatic of

skewed economic development in a region. Unfettered illegal immigration poses a whole range of challenges, including involvement in crime for survival because illegal immigrants can hardly obtain proper permanent employment; straining the social service infrastructure (health-care, educational facilities, shelter, etc) and threaten the environment (informal settlements which mushroom outside the planning framework of the relevant authorities). Thus, in dealing with illegal immigrants, as opposed to genuine verifiable asylum seekers in South Africa, it is crucial that international norms in this regard are strongly adhered to and complied with. Despite the draining effect of dealing with economic refugees, South Africa has the responsibility of treating them humanely, especially given the fact that South Africa is a prominent signatory to a multitude of human rights conventions and agreements. It is against this background that South Africa has undertaken to contribute substantially towards the development of the sub-region because it realises, as has already been mentioned, that it cannot be an island of prosperity in a sea of poverty.

The main vehicle for addressing these social security challenges is through encouraging foreign direct investment (FDI) and designing investor-friendly macro-economic policies. Economic co-operation between states is best achieved where playing fields are level, and that involved states make themselves mutually attractive to one another. With the increase in FDI, the national income increases, which enables the government sufficient leeway to share it by disbursing funds and supporting economically-viable labour-intensive regional projects which have the capacity to improve the living standards of the citizens. This in turn stems the propensity to emigrate while, at the same time, improves the security of the richer country's nationals.

Secondly, through economic co-operation, individual states benefit by pooling their resources to ensure that the interests of the group are properly articulated at international fora, which in turn helps governments to deal with aspirations of the population properly. While states are equal in terms of the Westphalian principles, the reality is that they are unequal in terms of the influence or pressure they can bring to bear on any given issue. The importance of territorial size in international relations has diminished in favour of economic size. To compensate for deficiencies with regard to the crucial power bases of the state, namely, natural resource endowment, size of GDP, technological advancement, military prowess and political influence, states enter into co-operative arrangements. This enables relatively smaller states to gain collectively from the international system what they could have lost individually. For

instance, South Africa in collaboration with Mercosur is currently attempting to influence the World Trade Organisation (WTO) to adopt trade regulations that will be favourably biased towards the developing world. Thus, states are able to pursue and secure national interests by identifying like-minded allies. Besides basic challenges to social security, there is another ominously powerful phenomenon called globalisation. The post-Cold War international scenario has catapulted regional Balkanisation and overlapping membership to various international organisations as the main strategy to counter the side-effects of globalisation and to avoid being subsumed by gigantic international role-players.

Thirdly, economic co-operation paves the way for co-operation in other more controversial areas. In accordance with the adage, 'States only have interests and no friends', states are inherently suspicious of one another's motives. This explains the origins of the sense of insecurity or security dilemma. Until there is general clarity on the actual intentions of another state that is proposing closer co-operation, there always seems to be uncertainty as to the extent that one party should trust the other. Although this was fairly easy to determine during the Cold War because of the bipolar nature of the international system, the post-Cold War era is even more complex. This stems from sensitivities such as the protection of intellectual property rights and the eternal fear that vital skills and technologies might be stolen through such diplomatic exchanges. There is general consensus that the main survival strategy for maximally benefiting from the rewards of globalisation is developing specialised skills, adding value to existing products, and identifying and captivating niche markets. This is as much the responsibility of the private sector as it is of the government. While globalisation advocates the opening up of markets, it creates a situation of 'unequal equality' in the sense that it equally affords any entrepreneur a chance to sell products anywhere on the globe, but the playing fields are not equal. Entrepreneurs from the developing countries do not possess sufficient resources or skills to penetrate the markets of developed countries. Thus, bilateral and multilateral arrangements are normally characterised by a gradual incremental approach in terms of issues open for co-operation. Therefore, economic co-operation provides a first-level assessment for possible co-operation in other more sensitive areas.

Fourthly, democratic states with strong economic ties tend to avoid war with each other as the stakes are too high for both sides. As already indicated, Germany is an exception to the rule because it initiated war while having strong economic ties with neighbours. Mutual

investments take a long time to build and this normally requires extensive harmonisation of macro-economic policies for mutual benefit. Mutual trust guides interaction between the co-operating states. This is further strengthened by adhering to universally-recognised democratic principles. Woodrow Wilson, the former US President, argued that the main enemy of peace "was neither private ownership nor conflict between senses and reason, but rather the absence of political democracy."[106] For democracies, jealously-guarded technologies are sometimes partially shared, as most co-operative arrangements usually include clauses on skills transfer and technological exchange.

With the increase in the formation of regional economic blocs, inter-state wars are increasingly becoming obsolete. However, this applies largely to highly developed and functional regional economic blocs such as the EU and NAFTA. For dysfunctional regional blocs such as SADC, war is still very much part of the conflict-resolution mechanism. As already indicated above, there is limited intra-regional trade and investment within SADC, while within Mercosur the trend is impressive. Similarly, mutual investments between South Africa and the Mercosur countries show an upward trend. Economic co-operation therefore provides a sound mechanism for establishing a long-term protective shield for citizens in countries that buy into the arrangement.

Lastly, increased economic co-operation should not be marred by such phenomena as drug-trafficking and piracy on the high seas. Drug-trafficking in particular is extremely damaging as in most cases it relies on the existing channels of official trade and makes use of legitimate trading mechanisms such as registered ships, scheduled flights and regular land-transport. Even though efforts should be geared towards reducing supplies of drugs, this should be complemented with corresponding efforts to reduce demand as well. Anything in between, that is control of transportation modes or facilities, requires a drastic overhaul for all countries involved. National legislation and efforts by international agencies, such as Interpol, can only succeed if countries in the South Atlantic region harmonise policies and standard operating procedures at airports, harbours and border areas.

7. CONCLUSION

Concurrently with the broadening of the concept of security, some military threats have receded while certain non-military threats have increased. Non-military threats require a

concerted effort from both developed and developing nations alike as their effects transcend national and regional borders. Most of these threats lie in the socio-economic arena. They range from financial crises to resource depletion, and from extreme poverty to environmental degradation. While these threats do not necessarily constitute threats to national security individually, their combination could pose a potent threat.

South Africa's relations with the Mercosur countries is rooted in the understanding that socio-economic development and long-term economic prosperity which seek to address some of these incipient threats, are crucial for national security. This chapter has demonstrated the inextricable link between socio-economic issues and national security. It also showed how socio-economic co-operation has become the common currency, which defines international relations in the post-Cold War era.

The historical development of socio-economic relations between South Africa and the Mercosur countries was discussed. This section revealed the chequered manner in which these countries interacted with South Africa, especially prior to the latter's transition to a democratic dispensation in 1994. During the sanctions era, countries now constituting Mercosur either maintained low-profile relations with South Africa or simply abrogated the UN-imposed economic and military sanctions. With the demise of the Soviet Union in the early 1990s and the advent of democracy in South Africa, a whole new era was ushered in regarding trans-Atlantic relations involving South Africa. Interaction between the countries on both sides of the Atlantic increased and these were underpinned by high-level diplomatic visits which culminated in the signing of various agreements and memoranda of understanding.

Being a regional giant, any agreement entered into by South Africa with any major extra-regional country or organisation is bound to impact on SADC. A brief discussion of the prospects for inter-regional co-operation between Mercosur and SADC was presented. Huge differences were highlighted between Mercosur and SADC, especially on the level of development and the nature of internal dynamics dominating the two regional organisations. While both organisations concur that broad security for their nationals could be effected through socio-economic development, there are clear indications that SADC still has much to learn from such organisations as Mercosur and ASEAN, as the latter two organisations largely consist of developing countries, as is the case with SADC.

Applying the same approach as with regard to socio-economic co-operation, the next chapter deals with military relations between South Africa and the Mercosur countries. Military interaction between states usually demonstrate a higher level of mutual trust and commitment to the economic and political ideals. Being the executive arms of governments, the military occupy a unique position in international relations. An attempt will be made to demonstrate that, as much as the military dimension of security has declined as a general global trend, it is still being pursued quite vigorously by some states. The achievements attained in the socio-economic arena require that they be buttressed by a credible capacity to secure them militarily, if necessary.

REFERENCES

1 Sperling, J. and Kirchner, E. 1998. "Economic Security and the Problem of Cooperation in post-Cold War Europe." ***Review of International Studies***, Vol. 24, No.2, p. 221. See also Muñoz, H. "The Dominant Themes in Latin American Foreign Relations: An Introduction", in Muñoz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996. ***Latin American Nations in World Politics***. Boulder: Westview Press, pp. 1-2.

2 Barber, J. "Regional Co-operation and Integration: South Africa, the Southern African Develoment Community (SADC) and *Mercado Comun del Sur* (Mercosur)", in Guimarães, S.P. (ed.) 1996. ***South Africa and Brazil: Risks and Opportunities in the Turmoil of Globalisation***. Rio de Janeiro: International Relations Research Institute, p. 333.

3 Viejobueno, S.A.M. 1995. ***Mercosur: A Decisive Step Towards South American Economic Revival. Occasional Paper No. 10,*** Pretoria, November, Unisa Centre for Latin American Studies, pp. 6-7.

4 *Ibid*, pp. 7-8.

5 Heine, J. 1995. "South-South Relations After the Cold War". A presentation made by the Ambassador of Chile to the Foreign Affairs Committee, National Assembly, South African Parliament. Cape Town, 7 June 1995.

6 *Ibid.*

7 Leysens, A. 1992(a). "The Political Economy of South Africa's Relations with Latin America: Past Developments and Prospects for Future Co-operation within the context of South Africa." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 8, No. 1, March, pp. 38-39. See also Leysens, A. 1992(b). "South Africa's Relations with Latin America (1966 - 1988)". ***Occasional Paper, No. 6.*** Pretoria: Unisa Centre for Latin American Studies, Pretoria, November, p. 4.

8 Whittaker, D.J. 1995. ***United Nations in Action***. London: UCL Press, pp. 166-167.

9 Republic of South Africa. 1965. ***Debates of the House of Assembly (Hansard),*** Vol. 13, 12 March, column, 2737.

10 *Ibid.*

11 Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1968. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 22, 22 Maart, kolom 2787.

12 Gamba-Stonehouse, V. 1989. ***Strategy in the Southern Oceans: A South American View.*** London: Pinter Publishers, p. 93.

13 Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1966. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 16, 25 Januarie, kolom 23-24

14 Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1968. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 24, 13 Februarie, kolom 437.

15 Leysens, A. 1992(a). *op cit*, p. 39.

16 *Ibid*.

17 *Ibid,* pp. 44-45.

18 Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1968. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 22, 22 Maart, kolom 2790-2791.

[19] Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1968. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 23, 27 Maart, kolom 2294-2295.

[20] Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1968. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard***), Deel 23, 2 April, kolom 3370-3371.

[21] Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1971. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard***), Deel 32, 12 Maart, kolom 2703.

[22] *Ibid,* kolom 2692.

[23] Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1968. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 23, 2 April, kolom 3370-3371.

[24] Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1975. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 58, 14 Februarie, kolom 124-125.

[25] Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1976. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 64, 22 Maart, kolom 629.

[26] Address by President Nelson Mandela at the Mercosur Heads of State Summit, Ushuaia, 24 July 1998. Information provided by the Office of the President, Pretoria.

[27] *Ibid*.

[28] Golçalves, G.B. 1999. "Mercosur Today: Choices and Challenges", in Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. (eds.) ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA), p. 28.

[29] ***The Star*** *(Johannesburg)*, 24 January 2000.

[30] ***Beeld***, 21 March 2000. See also ***The Star*** *(Johannesburg)*, 9 June 2000.

[31] Address by President Thabo Mbeki at the Mercosur Summit, Brazil, 15 December 2000. Information provided by the Office of the Presidency, Pretoria.

[32] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992. "The Forgotten Dimension: South African/Latin American Relations Past and Present." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 8, No. 2, September, pp. 5-6.

[33] *Ibid,* p. 5.

[34] Tulchin, J.S. *op cit*, p. 165.

[35] Leysens, A. 1992(b), *op cit*, p. 46.

[36] ***The Star*** *(Johannesburg)*, 24 July 1998.

[37] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992, *op cit*, p. 9.

[38] Leysens, A. 1992(b), *op cit*, p. 49.

[39] *Ibid*. p. 50.

[40] Waisman, C.H. "Argentina: Capitalism and Democracy", in Diamond, L. et. al. (eds.) 1999. ***Democracy in Developing Countries: Latin America,*** Second Edition. London: Lynner Rienner Publishers, p. 121.

[41] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1999(a). "President Mandela Strengthens Relations: State Visit to Brazil and Argentina, and Address to the Mercosur Summit at Ushuaia". ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 15, No. 1, p. 29.

[42] Hakim, P. 1996. "Good News From Paraguay: A Coup d'Etat Falls Flat." ***Christian Science Monitor***, Boston, 30 May, p. 19. See also Valenzuela, A. 1997. "Paraguay: The Coup That Didn't Happen." ***Journal of Democracy***, No. 8.1, pp. 43-55.

[43] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1999(a). *op cit*, p. 29.

[44] *Ibid,* p. 28. See also ***The Star*** *(Johannesburg)*, 24 July 1998.

[45] *Ibid,* p. 29.

[46] Banks, A.S., Day, A.J. and Muller, T.C. (eds.) 1997. ***Political Handbook of the World: 1997***. New York: CSA Publications, pp. 104-106, 766-771.

[47] ***Business Day*** *(Johannesburg)*, 20 July 1998.

[48] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1999(b). "Consolidating Ties Between Brazil and South Africa: An Interview with Ivan Cannabrava." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 15, No. 2, p. 49. See also ***Business Day*** *(Johannesburg)*, 20 July 1998.

[49] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992. *op cit*, p. 5.

[50] *Ibid*, p. 6.

[51] Pen, M. "Candomblé: A Glimpse at Brazil's African Roots, October, 22, 2000. www.infobrazil.com.

[52] Republic of South Africa. National Archives. PM 37/2/20. Pretoria.

[53] Republic of South Africa. National Archives. PM 4/2/46. Pretoria.

[54] *Ibid.*

[55] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992. *op cit*, p. 7.

[56] Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1968. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 22, 22 Maart, kolom 2790-2791.

[57] Muñoz, H. *op cit,* p. 2.

[58] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992, *op cit.* p. 7.

[59] *Ibid*, pp. 7-8.

[60] *Ibid*.

[61] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1999. "Consolidating Ties Between Brazil and South Africa: An Interview with Ivan Cannabrava." *op cit*, p. 50.

[62] Van Bleck, C. 1996. "SA – Brazil: A New Era of Friendship". ***SA Now***, Vol. 1, No. 10, November, p. 34.

[63] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1995. "Brazil's New Role in South and Southern Africa: An Interview with Luiz Felipe Lampreia." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol 11, No. 2, p. 52.

[64] Van Bleck, C., *op cit,* pp. 31-32.

[65] "Profile of Bilateral Relations: Federative Republic of Brazil". www.dfa.gov.za/for-relations/bilateral/ brazil.htm. See also ***Business Day*** *(Johannesburg)*, 20 July 1998.

[66] *Ibid.* www.dfa.gov.za/ for-relations/bilateral/ brazil.htm.

[67] *Ibid.* www.dfa.gov.za/ for-relations/bilateral/ brazil.htm.

[68] Joint Statement by President Mbeki of South Africa and President Fernando Herique Cardoso of Brazil, 13 December 2000. Office of the President.

[69] ***The Star*** *(Johannesburg)*, 11 December 2000.

[70] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992. *op cit,* p. 8.

[71] Republiek van Suid Afrika. 1975. ***Debatte Van die Volksraad (Hansard),*** Deel 58**,** 11 Februarie, kolom 84-85.

[72] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992, *op cit*, p. 11.

[73] *Ibid*.

[74] *Ibid,* pp. 9-10.

[75] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1995. "Chilean Minister of the Economy Visits South Africa." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 11, No. 1, January – June, p. 73.

[76] Address by President Nelson Mandela at the state banquet in honour of President Eduardo Frei of the Republic of Chile, Pretoria, 12 November 1998.

[77] Bouzas, R. 1999. "Mercosur's External Trade Negotiations: Dealing with a Congested Agenda", in Roett, R. (ed.) ***Mercosur: Regional Integration, World Markets***. London: Lynne Reinner Publishers, p. 84.

[78] Saraiva, J.F. 1997. "A Comparative Analysis of the Foreign Policies of South Africa and Brazil." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 13, No. 2, July – December, p. 33.

[79] Cleary, S. 1998. *op cit*, p. 56.

[80] Article 24 of the SADC Treaty signed in Windhoek, 17 August 1992. See also Articles 8 and 20 of the Treaty of Asunción, *op cit*.

[81] ***The Star*** *(Johannesburg)*, 30 October 1998.

[82] Barber, J. *op cit*, p. 346.

[83] ***Finance Week***, 7 April 2000.

[84] Marckwald, R.A. "Mercosur-SADC: Prospects for a South-South Cooperation", in Guimarães, S.P. (ed.) *op cit*, p.500.

[85] ***Finansies & Tegniek***. 8 October 1999.

[86] ***Cape Times*** *(Cape Town)*, 29 October 1998.

[87] Marckwald, R.A. *op cit,* pp. 508-510.

[88] ***Sunday Independent*** *(Johannesburg)*, 11 March 1997.

[89] Campbell, K. 2000. "Good Time for South-South Trade Bridges." ***Engineering News***, Vol. 20, 21-27 April, p. 9. See also ***Business Day*** *(Johannesburg)*, 25 April 2000.

[90] ***Die Burger*** *(Cape Town)*, 30 October 1998.

[91] Information provided by the South African Department of Foreign Affairs (DFA), SADC Desk, on 3 October 2001.

[92] Thahane, T. and Van der Merwe, E. "Mercosur and SADC: Investment and Trade Linkages", in Mills, G. & Mutschler, C. (eds.) *op cit*, p. 110.

[93] South African Police Service Organised Crime Unit. ***Anti-Organised Crime Measures,*** August 1997.

[94] Shaw, M. 1998. "Organised Crime in Post-Apartheid South Africa." ***Occasional Paper No. 28,*** Institute for Security Studies, Pretoria, January, pp. 1-2.

[95] *Ibid*, p. 2. See also ***Cape Argus*** *(Cape Town)*, 18 June 2001.

[96] Leggett, T. "Drugs in South Africa: The Latest Trends", in Institute for Security Studies. 1999. ***Nedbank ISS Crime Index***, Vol. 3, No. 5, September – October. See also ***Cape Argus*** *(Cape Town)*, 18 June 2001.

[97] Shaw, M. *op cit,* p. 3.

[98] SAPA. "Interpol to Investigate Cape Cocaine Bust". www.iol.co.za (21 July 2001)

[99] www.iol.co.za (2 August 2001).

[100] ***Cape Argus*** *(Cape Town)*, 31 May 2001.

[101] SAPA. "Legalise Drugs, says The Economist". www.iol.co.za (26 July 2001)

[102] ***Cape Times*** *(Cape Town)*, 27 July 2001. See also www.iol.co.za (29 July 2001).

[103] Papp, D.S. 1992. ***Contemporary International Relations: Frameworks for Understanding,*** Third Edition. New York: Macmillan Publishing Company, pp. 562-563.

[104] *Ibid*, p. 562.

[105] Kegley, C.W. & Wittkopf, E.R. 1993. ***World Politics: Trends and Transformation***, Fourth Edition. New York: St. Martin's Press, p. 444.

[106] Papp, D.S. *op cit*, p. 563.

CHAPTER FOUR

BILATERAL MILITARY CO-OPERATION BETWEEN SOUTH AFRICA AND THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES

1. INTRODUCTION

The military establishments of both South Africa and the Mercosur countries have played significant roles in the domestic political arena, particularly in the period following WW II. These roles ranged from attempting to defend citizens against foreign aggression to usurping the reigns of power or exercising undue influence over the political authorities. At different times, the military have, on both sides of the South Atlantic, both defended and violated the human rights of nationals in the name of national security or national interests.

This chapter firstly analyses the historical military interaction between South Africa and its trans-Atlantic neighbours up to 1994. Secondly, the nature and scope of post-1994 military relations are analysed according to military representation; high-profile visits by military personnel; military training; mutual defence agreements; and co-operation among defence-related industries. The chapter concludes with a brief analysis of the existing military capabilities of these countries with a view to highlighting potential areas for improving military co-operation.

2. HISTORICAL MILITARY RELATIONS

The roots of the interaction between the South African armed forces and those of the Mercosur countries date back to the colonial relationship between these countries and their colonisers. Furthermore, the role and nature of the dominant international system had a profound impact on such relations. In most cases the interaction between South African and South American armed forces was largely determined by the dominant balance-of-power relations among the powerful nations of the North. In this respect, countries from the South were used to satisfy or complement the military needs of the European colonisers, and served as extensions of the colonisers' foreign policy instruments. When the colonial era came to an end, which happened much earlier in South America than in Africa, internal struggles for

political control ensued. In most cases the military intervened as moderators or contestants for political power. This situation was aggravated by the superimposition of the Cold War, during which some of the states were used by the superpowers as proxies for their global political agenda. Consequently, the relationship between the countries on both sides of the Atlantic Ocean — from the Northern Hemisphere to the Southern Hemisphere — defined the international relations of South Atlantic countries on the basis of their alignment in a bipolar world. It is against this background that South Africa's interaction with individual countries now constituting Mercosur has historically been chequered and inconsistent.

2.1 ARGENTINA

The nature of military relations between South Africa and Argentina can hardly be described as ever hostile because both in the pre-1994 and post-1994 periods, military interaction continued unabated, *albeit* secretly in the pre-1994 period. The imposition of a mandatory arms embargo against South Africa in terms of UN Security Council Resolution 418 of 1977, was seen as a bearable inconvenience. Faced with a real threat on its borders, in the form of Brazil, Argentina resolved to befriend any country that would help augment its military capacity and diplomatic relations, and South Africa presented itself in that light.

2.1.1 Pre-1994 Argentine-South Africa military relations

South Africa was first militarily linked to Argentina in 1806 just after the British had captured Cape Town. The British forces, under Sir Home Popham, launched an unauthorised attack on the Spanish colonies along the River Plate, using Cape Town as a base. At that stage, the Spanish Empire was on the verge of total collapse and therefore reluctant (or probably incapable) of defending all its colonial possessions. The attack was a total failure as the British had to abort the operation following fierce resistance from the Argentineans. However, this had a profound effect on the way the Argentineans perceived their coloniser — Spain. Some of the British forces occupied adjacent territory, which later became Uruguay. Subsequently, there was a general feeling that the Argentineans and the inhabitants of the neighbouring countries had proven beyond reasonable doubt that they were capable of defending themselves and therefore did not need Spain for protection. Thus, the seeds for liberation movements had been sown. It is highly unlikely that the attack on Argentina by

Britain in the early nineteenth century would have taken place without having the Cape Colony as a launching pad.[1]

Increasingly, both Argentina and South Africa realised their strategic value to the South Atlantic region. This realisation became more conspicuous as the traditional rivalry for hegemony and the quest for control of the River Plate intensified. Furthermore, Argentina was engaged in bilateral negotiations with Uruguay about fishing rights, which the latter wanted to exploit to the maximum. For Argentina, Uruguay represented an obstacle to the former's quest for hegemonic influence in the sub-region. For many years there had always been a rivalry between the ports of Buenos Aires and Montevideo where the former was regarded as the "door to the River Plate" and the latter as "the natural key to the coast".[2] Thus, based on global strategic considerations, parallel 35^0S from Punta del Este (Uruguay) to the Cape of Good Hope (South Africa) was regarded as the "new key to the global system of defence."[3] Besides, both Argentina and South Africa had had to deal with Britain on issues that had direct military implications. Britain had sought to establish a clear link between the Indian and Atlantic Oceans both for economic, political and military considerations. To this effect, following the Peace Convention in 1828, Britain secured a dominion over the River Plate and in 1833 Britain took over control of the Falklands/Malvinas island. In 1967 Britain ceded control of the Simon's Town naval base back to South Africa.

After becoming a Republic on 31 May 1961, South Africa began a campaign to establish diplomatic ties with like-minded countries. As was indicated in the previous chapter, there was a growing realisation that it was imperative for South Africa to cement ties with the South American states, under the pretext of solidarity against communism. Most of these countries, including Argentina, were under military rule and therefore facing political insecurity both internally and externally. Diplomatic relations between South Africa and Argentina were regarded as crucial by both countries, but particularly so for the former than the latter. South Africa extended its diplomatic relations with Argentina by creating an embassy with a military attaché in Argentina. On 15 March 1968 the first Navy Attaché, Commandant J.J.C. Rice, who had been the military attaché in Portugal, was appointed in Argentina.[4] While Argentina had a military representative in South Africa, it was loathe to establish similar representation in the whole of Southern Africa. For instance, it was announced on 8 January 1975 that Argentina and Rwanda were going to establish diplomatic ties at ambassadorial level, but that none of the two representatives would be resident in the

two countries.[5] By this time, South Africa was represented in Argentina by Commander P.A.H. Tomlinson until 15 February 1975 when he was replaced by Captain (SAN) J.C. Ferris as the Armed Forces Attaché.[6]

By the time the Falklands/Malvinas War broke out in 1982 between Britain and Argentina, the military relations between Argentina and South Africa were already at an advanced stage. In fact, for many years speculation has been rife that South Africa actually provided covert military support to Argentina during the Falklands/Malvinas War. There were even allegations that South Africa was supplying Argentina with missiles and spare parts for their aircraft. It was speculated that the assistance stemmed from South Africa's ten-year old military pact with Argentina, which also included Brazil, Paraguay, Israel and Taiwan.[7] However, not a shred of evidence has ever come to light to confirm the allegations.[8] It is likely that these allegations were based on the fact that there were Afrikaans-speaking people who participated during the Falklands/Malvinas War on the side of the Argentineans. Those people were actually the descendants of the Afrikaans-speaking refugees who settled in Argentina during the period 1902-1905, just after the Anglo-Boer War (1899-1902). Some of them settled in Chile.[9] Furthermore, South Africa's records that document the Falklands conflict do not mention any active participation of the country in the war, unless such information was excised from the records or relevant records were destroyed.[10] Of course, military co-operation with countries such as Argentina, Iran, Israel, Uruguay, the United Kingdom (UK), and many other states was shrouded in secrecy. In fact, there was a standing policy within the South African defence establishment to destroy sensitive documents, especially the monthly military reports called ISUMS. South Africa's military attachés all over the world were under strict orders to destroy these documents and to submit 'destruction certificates' as proof that such documents had been destroyed.[11]

On 9 December 1983, South Africa promulgated a policy for mutual training with some South American countries. The primary aim of the policy was to ensure that there were continuous symbiotic exchanges between these countries and South Africa, especially in improving the latter's military skills. Furthermore, given the fact that South Africa was still subjected to sanctions, such mutual training ensured skills transfer and strengthened political relations among the countries involved. By the end of 1983, South Africa's military training exchange programme with Argentina was already fairly extensive (Table 10).

Table 10: ARGENTINA'S MILITARY STUDENTS TRAINED IN SOUTH AFRICA (AS IN DECEMBER 1983)

Nature of Course	Rank Group	No. of Students
Commando Training	Sergeant; Lieutenant and Captain	3
Training on board ship (ARA LIBERATAD)	Midshipman; Sub-Lieutenant	3
Intelligence Courses	Captain	3
Training on Ice-breaker	Lieutenant-Commander; Commander	2

Source: SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1/ Montevideo***, 9 December 1983.

South Africa accommodated Argentinean military students on a number of courses, namely, the SA Army Command and Staff course; the SA Air Force Staff course; the SA Naval Staff course and the Junior Joint Warfare course. The primary aim of the Command and Staff course was (and still is) to "qualify selected officers as Officers Commanding and Senior Staff officers for utilisation on formation level in the field."[12] The Junior Joint Warfare course was designed to "qualify members to serve in a joint organisation" and to "train them to be able to serve in a Joint Operation Centre in Joint Planning Warfare".[13] One of the distinguishing characteristics of former SADF forces was the emphasis on the training of junior leaders and their immediate superiors. Thus, Argentina sought South Africa's expertise in the management and conduct of operations both at tactical and operational levels. This trend of military interaction persisted until the political landscape in both countries changed.

2.1.2 Post-1994 Argentine-South Africa military relations

The military relations between Argentina and South Africa after 1994 were characterised by a great deal of continuity and stability in many dimensions, including military representation; high-profile goodwill visits; and training exchange programmes.

2.1.2.1 *Military representation*

The advent of democracy in South Africa necessitated the revival of active and open consultations between the military establishments of South Africa and Argentina. As Table 11 indicates, extensive military representation of South Africa in Argentina started in earnest in 1986. The restructuring process of South Africa's world-wide diplomatic representation resulted in South Africa's representative in Argentina also being accredited to Paraguay and Uruguay. [14]

Table 11: SADF AND, AFTER 1994, SANDF ATTACHÉS IN ARGENTINA

Name	Period
Capt (SAN) L.N. Erleigh	December 1986 – December 1989
Capt (SAN) R.A.S. Hauter	December 1989 – December 1992
Capt (SAN) J.B. Rabe	December 1992 – December 1995
Capt (SAN) B.R. Donkin	December 1995 – December 1998
Capt (SAN) S.L. Pillay	December 1998 – to date*

Note: * Denotes "as at the end of 2002"

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

The Argentine military office in Pretoria was re-opened in February 1993. Like South Africa, the Argentine military representative is responsible for all defence-related matters, that is for all arms of service (Army, Air Force and Navy). It is also notable that only naval officers have thus far represented the Argentine armed forces in South Africa (Table 12). This may be indicative of the nature of the interests Argentina has in South Africa or the type of military relations that have to be strengthened, that is, they should be guided by naval interests.

Table 12: ARGENTINEAN MILITARY ATTACHÉS IN SOUTH AFRICA

Name	Capacity/ Designation	Period
Capt (N) J.I. Abelleyra	Naval, Military and Air Attaché	February 1993 – February 1995
Capt (N) R.D. Lozano	Naval, Military and Air Attaché	February 1995 – February 1997
Capt (N) H.J. Santillan	Defence Attaché	January 1997 – February 1999
Capt (N) L.A. Collavino	Naval, Military and Air Attaché	February 1999 – January 2001
Capt (N) M.E. Fenley	Naval, Military and Air Attaché	January 2001 – to date*

Note: * Denotes "as at the end of 2002"

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

2.1.2.2 *Military visits*

One of the prominent tasks of political and military representatives in a country is to facilitate exposure of the host country's senior personnel to the countries from which such representatives originated. This implies proposing, encouraging, and co-ordinating high-profile visits to those countries. Thus, visits normally give a good indication of the eagerness to identify and understand mutual interests. With regard to Argentine-South Africa military relations, there have been limited exchange visits by high-profile military leaders (both uniformed and civilian).

On the civilian side, Juan Carlos Melián, an adviser to the Defence Commission of the Argentinian Parliament, visited the Unisa Centre for Latin American Studies (UCLAS) on 19 March 1996. He was accompanied by Germán Domínguez, Cultural Attaché, Embassy of the Argentine Republic in South Africa. According to Melián, one of the long-term goals of his visit to South Africa was to strengthen co-operation in the South Atlantic region. Being a member of the council of an association popularly known as the *Seguridad Estratégica Regional (SER or Regional Strategic Security),* Melián stated

that he wanted to "promote debate on security and defence problems on national, regional and international levels." He further indicated that the SER was in the process of establishing a database for such purposes.[15]

On the military side, the South African Chief of Navy twice visited Argentina (October 1996 and October 1997). In September 1996, the Argentine Chief of Army, General Balza, visited the South African Army. The then South African Chief of Army, Lieutenant-General Otto, paid a goodwill visit to Argentina in February 1997. During the following year, in April 1998, the Argentine Chief of Army Staff paid a goodwill visit to the South African Army. The other significant visit by Argentine personnel was during the "Africa Aerospace and Defence 2000", a Defence and Aerospace Industry Exposition, and "SAAF 80", the SA Air Force' 80th birthday celebrations, all of which took place from 5-9 September 2000 at the Waterkloof Air Force Base. Making the 2000 visit even more special was the fact that Argentina was the only South American country attending the show that had sent two aircraft.[16]

2.1.2.3 *Military training*

Since the democratisation of South Africa in 1994, the Argentine armed forces have not sent a single military student to attend any of the SANDF military courses in South Africa by October 2001. It could be argued that because South Africa is still busy with the integration process, there are limited slots for foreign students. Conversely, South Africa has been able to secure training slots in the Argentine armed forces' training programmes. For instance, during 1995, the SA Navy sent a surface attachment to Argentina. In the same year and the following one a SA Navy officer attended the Naval Control of Shipping course. Similarly, in 1999 and 2000, a SA Navy officer attended the Ice Navigation course in each year.[17]

As already indicated, there is a clear preponderance of navy-related activities between the two countries. This could be ascribed to the existence of two agreements in this respect. Firstly, the Agreement on the Exchange of Information on Maritime Traffic which was signed on 30 August 1991. The second one was the Agreement of Peacetime Co-operation between Argentine-RSA Navies, which was signed in October 1997.[18] While the first agreement seems to be a logical bilateral arrangement between

two countries with large oceanic waters separating them, the second one seems to exclude periods of conflict and/or war. It should not be misconstrued as a bilateral mutual defence agreement which would guarantee mutual military assistance during times of war.

It is therefore evident that Argentine-South Africa military relations continued through the years of isolation for South Africa. Binding the two countries was their perceived common threat of communism that would engulf the South Atlantic states. The outbreak of the Falklands/Malvinas War or the South Atlantic War in 1982, might have increased South Africa's strategic value to Argentina. It is notable that most of the Argentine-South Africa military interaction was largely with regard to training. South Africa's training to the Argentineans was predominantly in the battle-handling arena, while the Argentineans provided some technical military training. With the democratisation of Argentina, active military interaction with South Africa was reduced when the former's military office in Pretoria was closed down. Even though there have been increased military activities between the two countries in the post-1994 era, there is still room for improvement in terms of quality of interaction beyond symbolism.

2.2 BRAZIL

The hegemonic rivalry in the region involving Brazil and Argentina, to a large extent affected the way both countries interacted with South Africa. Being a *pariah* state at the time, South Africa sought to exploit the situation to its advantage. Maintaining cordial relations with the two countries would support South Africa's position in international fora such the UN General Assembly. However, historical events prove that this was not always possible as both countries regularly reviewed their political stance towards South Africa, especially when they democratised during the early to mid-1980s.

2.2.1 Pre-1994 Brazil-South Africa military relations

Military relations between Brazil and South Africa vacillated from cordial to almost hostile. The cordiality of such relations was normally linked to the nature of the government and the political system in Brazil. During the period of military

governments in Brazil, relations could not be characterised as positive due to the international *pariah* status of South Africa. This limited cordiality during military rule in Brazil did not translate into full-fledged military diplomatic representation. There were interactions between the two military establishments, but most of it was shrouded in secrecy. Ironically, South African and Brazilian armed forces fought alongside each other during the WW II. In fact, during that war the South African 6th Division supplied the Brazilian army — *Força Expedicionária Brasileira (FEB)* — with winter uniforms, as "the Brazilian soldiers went to Italy unprepared for the Italian winter."[19] This could partly explain the relations between the two military establishments, particularly in the light of the arms embargo imposed on South Africa, which Brazil supported but did not fully implement.

Being the target of UN-imposed sanctions, South Africa decided to devise strategies to attract support, or at least, sympathy from the South American countries in international fora. This stemmed from the so-called 'special relationship' that existed between South Africa's military attachés in South America and the senior authorities in the countries of that region. South Africa, through the Defence Committee, therefore decided to design a Psychological Action Plan – code-named 'Project Birch' – with a view to creating a climate conducive to supporting national policy. To this effect, all the military attachés in South America were requested to provide information on their countries of accreditation and specifically also comment on Peru and Brazil. The military attachés were to provide crucial information on the following priority areas: agriculture, animal husbandry, forestry, sub-economical housing or "any other civilian sector where [South Africa's] defence force can possibly be of assistance."[20] They also had to find out more about the extent and nature of formal and informal co-operation between the defence forces in the region with respect to training, joint exercises and social/cultural interaction.[21]

It is not clear what the impact of Project Birch was on the Brazil-South Africa military relations. The implementation of Project Birch coincided with the period during which the Brazilian government discouraged all forms of military interaction with South Africa. For instance, the government prevented EMBRAER, the state-run arms-

producing company, from competing for the order to supply training aircraft to the South African (SA) Air Force.[22]

Consequently, the South African government found itself in a dilemma. On the one hand there was a possibility of using the military attaché in Montevideo to represent South Africa's military interests in Brazil. On the other hand, the sheer size and importance of Brazil in the South American sub-region was such that it required dedicated representation. Therefore, ignoring Brazil was not an option at all. During the mid-1980s the South African military establishment, in consultation with Department of Foreign Affairs officials, was contemplating placing an undercover military representative in Brazil. The significance of military representation in Brazil was further accentuated by the ever-increasing possibility of South Africa's military representation in other countries in the Southern Cone sub-region, being threatened. In the likely event that South Africa's military attachés in countries such as Argentina, Chile, Paraguay and Uruguay, were withdrawn (or would be forced to withdraw), it was argued that the military interests of South Africa would then be better served by having an undercover representative in Brazil. Another consoling factor for South Africa was the perception that Brazil was predominantly anti-leftist and anti-communist in its worldview. The Brazilian elíte shared South Africa's concerns about the possible infiltration of communist elements in the South Atlantic region.[23] However, such shared threats or perception of threats did not translate into closer interaction between the two countries. It was only with the change of government in South Africa in 1994 that direct military interaction resumed in earnest.

2.2.2 Post-1994 Brazil-South Africa military relations

Military interaction between the two countries was largely in the area of diplomatic representation; goodwill visits and training exchange programmes.

2.2.2.1 *Military representation*

As already indicated, overt military relations between Brazil and South Africa only commenced in 1994 with the advent of democracy in the country. Therefore, there have only been three military attachés representing South Africa in Brazil since 1994 (Table

13). It is notable that the first black military attaché in South America was appointed in Brazil. It is also notable that being a Lieutenant-Colonel, he was the first relatively junior military representative for South Africa in such an important country.

Table 13: SOUTH AFRICA'S MILITARY ATTACHÉS IN BRAZIL SINCE 1994

Name	Capacity/Designation	Period
Col A.F. Prins	Armed Forces Attaché	December 1994 – December 1997
Col C.V. Geldenhuys	Armed Forces Attaché	December 1997 – December 2000
Lt Col K. Malloi	Armed Forces Attaché	December 2000 to date*

Note: * Denotes "as at the end of 2002"

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

Unlike South Africa, Brazil has since 1994 always sent two military representatives to South Africa, one as military attaché (army and air force) and the other a naval attaché (Table 14). As is the case with Argentina, the navy is hardly ever coupled with any other arm of service, whereas the army is normally coupled with the air force. This demonstrates in no uncertain terms the seriousness with which the Brazilian armed forces regard South Africa from military, political and geo-strategic perspectives.

Table 14: BRAZILIAN MILITARY ATTACHÉS IN SOUTH AFRICA SINCE 1994

Name	Capacity/Designation	Period
Col J.E.C. Siquera	Military Attaché	February 1995 – February 1997
Capt (N) M.M. Torres	Naval Attaché	January 1995 – January 1997
Col R. Montechiari	Army & Air Attaché	February 1997 – February 1999
Capt (N) R. dos Santos	Naval Attaché	January 1997 – January 1999
Col M.F. Hennemann	Army & Air Attaché	February 1999 – January 2001
Capt (N) V.F. Japiassu	Naval Attaché	February 1999 – January

		2001
Capt (N) L. Zampronio	Defence and Naval Attaché	January 2001 to date*
Col M. Mandonca	Army & Air Attaché	January 2001 to date*

Note: * Denotes "as at the end of 2002"

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

2.2.2.2 *Military visits*

Given the high level of military representation of Brazilian interests in South Africa, it is only logical that there would be substantial interaction and high-profile visits between the two countries. The first official visit by a Brazilian naval vessel was in June 1995 when the hydrographic vessel — *SIRIUS* — conducted a routine visit to Cape Town. In 1996, three SANDF yachts participated in the Rio Yacht Race. During that visit, the Brazilian Navy provided essential support to the visiting members. During November of the same year, two SA Air Force members visited Brazil when they attended a fighter pilot symposium. The SA Special Forces paid an official visit to Brazil in 1997 and in the same year, the SA Chief of the Navy visited Brazil. Members of the SA Navy attended the South Atlantic Maritime Area Organisation meeting that was held in Brazil in March 1998. In April of the same year, the Chief of Staff of the Brazilian Army was hosted by the Chief of the SANDF. The SA Army Chaplain visited Brazil for the World Council of Churches (WCC) conference in May 1998. In October 1998, South African Rear-Admiral M.J.G. Soderlund and Commander Jamieson visited Brazil in order to finalise preparations for "ATLASUR 1999". During 1999 the Chief of the SA Army paid a goodwill visit to Brazil and in April of the same year the Chief of the SANDF was requested by DENEL to accompany their delegation to attend the "LAD 99 Defence Exhibition" in Brazil.[24]

One of the highlights of Brazil-South Africa military relations was during the 500th celebrations of "Discovery of Brazil" which took place on 30 April 2000. For that occasion, the SA Navy sent the SAS Protea, which is a hydrographic ship, to represent the SANDF.[25] When the SA Navy celebrated its 75th birthday, the Brazilian Navy reciprocated by sending three ships to South Africa. In the same year, the "Cape to Rio Yacht 2000" took place. The SANDF sent three yachts to participate in the race and the

Brazilian Navy once again provided essential support to the SANDF participants. During September 2000, the Chief of Staff of the Brazilian Navy paid a goodwill visit to South Africa, and members of the SA Defence Intelligence community visited Brazil for the Intelligence Exchange conference in November 2000. The Chief of SA Air Force attended the "LAD Defence Exhibition 2001" in April 2001 and in June 2001, the SA Chief of Army also paid a goodwill visit to Brazil.[26]

2.2.2.3 *Military training*

The SANDF has presented a few military courses to the Brazilian Armed Forces personnel, mostly naval courses (Table 15). It is also noteworthy that the Brazilians have been sending attachments to the SA Navy's ships as part of their training and also skills transfer programme from which both navies benefited.

Table 15: SANDF TRAINING PRESENTED TO THE BRAZILIAN ARMED FORCES SINCE 1994

Nature of Course/Training	Year
A Navy officer attended the Naval Command and Staff course	1997
An attachment to SAS OUTENIQUA	1998
A submarine attachment to the RSA	1998
A Navy officer attended the Foreign Officers' Orientation course	1998
An Army officer attended the SA Army Senior Command and Staff Duties	1999
Navy sent an MCM attachment	1999
A Navy officer attended the Naval Command and Staff course	1999

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

In accordance with the principle of reciprocity and complementarity, the SANDF has also sent its members to attend courses in Brazil. In addition to providing training on Naval Control of Shipping, the Brazilian Armed Forces have reserved slots for the SANDF to do Senior Staff courses and also to be able to send attachments to Brazilian ships, especially submarines (Table 16).

Table 16: **BRAZILIAN MILITARY TRAINING PRESENTED TO THE SANDF SINCE 1994**

Nature of Course	Year
SA Navy officer attended the Naval Control of Shipping course	1995
SA Navy officer attended the Naval Control of Shipping course	1996
SA Air Force officer attended the Brazilian Senior Air Force Staff course	1998
SA Army officer attended the Brazilian Army Senior Staff course	1998
SA Navy sent a submarine attachment to Brazil	1998
SA Navy sent an MCM attachment to Brazil	2000
SA Navy sent a submarine attachment to Brazil	2000

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

2.2.2.4 *Military agreements*

Most of the post-1994 military interactions and exchanges between Brazil and South Africa have been facilitated by substantial goodwill among politicians. Despite the fact that there has been no formal military agreement binding the two military establishments, their interaction surpasses other bilateral exchanges, which are based on formal agreements. There were various military agreements that were being negotiated during 2001. These included those pertaining to the following areas: merchant shipping and related maritime matters; environmental co-operation; science and technology; and aeronautical and maritime search and rescue services.[27] There are increasing indications that these could all be consolidated into a single Agreement on Defence and Security Co-operation. This became necessary after the restructuring of the Brazilian Ministry of Defence. It was generally expected that this agreement would be finalised and signed by mid-2001, but this did not materialise.[28] The finalisation of this agreement would give impetus to the expansion and diversification of military interaction between the two armed forces.

2.2.2.5 *Co-operation between the defence-related industries*

The co-operation of Brazil and South Africa in defence-related industries has an important sub-regional dimension. There has been increasing involvement of Brazil in the SADC sub-region, particularly in Namibia where the Brazilian Navy is assisting Namibia in creating a naval capacity. The Namibian Minister of Defence, Peter Mueshinghange, visited Brazil in the early 1990s with a view to soliciting assistance in establishing a military infrastructure such as a naval base for Namibia. In fact, Namibia had already ordered some patrol boats from Brazil. They also indicated interest in acquiring the Brazilian military trainer aircraft *Tucano* and the transport aircraft *Bandeirante* from EMBRAER. Thus, it would be necessary for Brazil to station some naval and air force personnel in Namibia in order to provide for the training and upgrading of Namibian defence force equipment.[29]

While the involvement of Brazil in Namibia should not be viewed as a threat to South Africa's security, it is important that both Brazil and Namibia should not harbour negative perceptions of South Africa, particularly in the military sphere. For many years, EMBRAER was prevented from providing weapons to South Africa due to sanctions imposed on the latter.[30] However, with the lifting of sanctions, co-operation between the two countries in the area of defence-related industries has not been as impressive as might have been expected. This is particularly due to the fact that South Africa is also a significant arms supplier (in Third World terms). For instance, in 1999 South Africa's DENEL was the only country listed in SIPRI's 100 largest arms-producing companies from the Organisation for Economic Co-operation and Development (OECD) and developing countries.[31] There have been very modest orders of military equipment by Brazil. In 1997, Brazil ordered the so-called Sensitive Major Significant Equipment (SMSE) and Sensitive Significant Equipment (SSE) to the value of R19 000 and R2,6 million respectively from South Africa. According to the South African National Conventional Arms Control Committee (NCACC), which is a statutory body responsible for designing and implementing South Africa's arms trade policy, the SMSE comprises "conventional implements of war that could cause heavy personnel casualties and/or major damage and destruction to material, structures, objects and facilities." The SSE refers to "all types of hand-held and portable weapons of a calibre smaller than 12,7 mm."[32]

It is speculated that DENEL and its subsidiaries will eventually be able to penetrate the Brazilian defence market either as sole providers or entering into joint partnership with Brazilian arms-producing companies. Areas of possible co-operation include, but are not limited to, artillery and maintenance or provision of aviation-related requirements.[33]

It is undeniably true that Brazil-South Africa relations in the military sphere are very much at an infancy stage. This is attributed to the strict adherence of Brazil to previous UN resolutions which effectively isolated South Africa. Both countries maintain mutual recognition and understanding of their significance in their respective regions. Furthermore, both countries have realised that in order for them to attain their global strategic objectives, they have to co-operate in dealing with issues of regional significance, particularly in the area of peace and security. Brazil's involvement in Southern Africa, largely in the previously Lusophone countries, is crucial in terms of peace-making in Angola and post-conflict peace-building activities in Mozambique. It could be speculated that if it were not for the involvement of countries such as Brazil, South Africa would arguably have had a much bigger problem in dealing with the security concerns of its neighbouring countries.

The future of Brazil-South Africa military relations will, to a great extent, be determined by the successful conclusion of relevant agreements, especially the proposed Agreement on Defence and Security Co-operation. This agreement is particularly important because it is reportedly aimed at consolidating all other bilateral agreements such as those pertaining to merchant shipping; environmental preservation; and search-and-rescue. Furthermore, it is in the area of defence industries where substantial co-operation could take place. However, being part of the developing world, both countries are likely to be caught up in competitive rather than co-operative roles as the arms market is increasingly shrinking owing to limited national investment in arms production, and also as a result of new entrants flooding the market with new products.

2.3 PARAGUAY

Unlike the case of Argentina and Brazil, Paraguay, as a small country, has been particularly vulnerable to external influences. This was further exacerbated by the role

played by the military establishment in the country. Paraguay could hardly resist temptations of flouting the international arms embargo regimes in its interactions with South Africa.

2.3.1 Pre-1994 Paraguay-South Africa military relations

While evidence abounds that commercial relations between South Africa and Paraguay were established at an early stage, military relations only developed during the mid-1970s. One of the most comprehensive visits by a South African delegation to Paraguay took place in January 1975, under the leadership of Brand Fourie, then Secretary of External Affairs.[34] The visiting delegation included highly influential business people and other government officials.[35]

South Africa's first Armed Forces Attaché to Paraguay, Colonel W.J. Piennaar took up his position in August 1975. Two days after his arrival in Asunción , the South Africa's Prime Minister B.J. Vorster paid a state visit to Paraguay.[36] Given the political situation and regional dynamics of hegemonic rivalry, particularly between Argentina and Brazil, it is not clear how South Africa managed to conduct defence diplomacy among hostile neighbours. However, it could nevertheless be argued that representation in countries such as Paraguay and Uruguay was symbolic and of no particular strategic significance. Even though Paraguay is a land-locked country, and therefore of limited strategic military value to South Africa, it appears as if South Africa's view of South America was that of a collection of states, which, as a group and under the leadership of Argentina and Brazil, had to be treated as a collective. Furthermore, South Africa's interest in Paraguay had to be seen against the background of growing co-operation between Paraguay and Argentina in the arms production arena. During the mid-1970s the president of *Fabricaciones Militares* of Argentina, General Horacio Anibal Rivera, and other high-ranking officers of the Argentine Army, signed an agreement with *Industrias Militares del Paraguay*. The Paraguayan government was represented by their Minister of Defence, General Marcial Samaniego. According to the agreement Paraguay would produce military explosives, while Argentina would provide raw materials, machinery, technical know-how and the training of Paraguayan personnel.[37]

Similarly, Brazil's President Geisel interacted closely with Paraguayan President Stroessner on issues of mutual concern, including arms production issues. The two presidents exchanged visits on a regular basis. In fact, on 19 May 1975 Brazil donated more than seven T-6 training aircraft to the Paraguayan Air Force which was headed by Brigadier-General Vicente F. Quinonez. Additional fighting equipment such as three Douglas DC-6 aircraft was later donated to Paraguay. On the same day that donations from Brazil landed at Asunción, the Argentine and Paraguayan navies started joint exercises in the area of confluence of the rivers Paraná and Paraguay. The joint exercise was known as *Sirena 1* which was essentially a joint air-naval exercise involving personnel from both countries.[38]

Co-operation between Paraguay and South Africa in the military sphere included training, arms transfers and arms production. Paraguay ordered South Africa-made weapons, particularly small-calibre weapons (9mm pistols, revolvers and shotguns), ammunition for pistols and shotguns, and parachutes. In some cases, Paraguayan officials exploited South Africa's status as a *pariah* state, by offering to order weapons for the latter from legitimate arms merchants from the West. It is not clear if South Africa ever made use of such offers.[39]

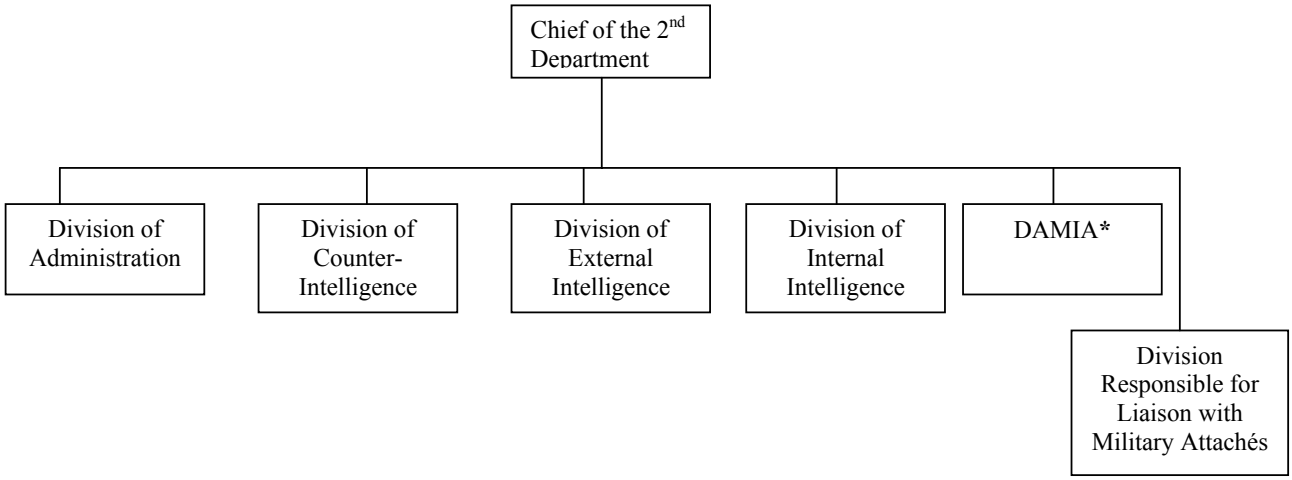
In the arms production arena, Paraguay faced a dual dilemma. On the one hand, Paraguay wanted to be a significant role-player in the regional context with regard to producing arms, but on the other hand, it did not possess the skills and capacity to do so. Following the discussions between the Chiefs of Staff Intelligence of South Africa and Chile in Pretoria in mid-1977, it transpired that Chile wanted to start a joint arms production venture with Paraguay. However, the latter did not have any arms production industry. Paraguay therefore approached South Africa to become a partner in the joint venture. The Paraguayan military representative discussed the matter with president General Stroessner who was favourably disposed towards the suggestion.[40] It is not clear if this joint venture ever came to fruition and whether or not South Africa's proposed co-operation with Paraguay in the arms-production enterprise was to be done overtly or covertly.

With regard to military training, as at December 1983, South Africa had already provided military training to Paraguayan officers in the form of a SA Army Command

and Staff course; a SA Air Force Staff course, training on Impala aircraft; exchange of naval officers; Infantry Battle handling; and a Combat Group Commanders course.[41] Further training was provided in 1985 in the form of the SA Army Command and Staff course and also the SA Air Force's Basic Pilots Training on Impala and Harvard for two Paraguayan officers.[42]

However, most of the military interaction between Paraguay and South Africa was conducted through their intelligence structures. South Africa's Military Intelligence Division (MID) and the 2nd Department (as the Military Intelligence body was known) of the Paraguayan Armed Forces, held regular bilateral (and sometimes multilateral) intelligence conferences with a view to dealing with topical issues of mutual concern. One such bilateral conference took place during August 1984.[43]

Figure 4: THE ORGANISATION OF THE 2ND DEPARTMENT (MILITARY INTELLIGENCE) OF THE PARAGUAYAN ARMED FORCES AS AT AUGUST 1984



* *DAMIA*: This division was responsible for collection of military intelligence, regional security, feasibility studies and projects, military conferences and liaison with other defence forces in Latin America.

Source: SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 3, Box 1, ***File AMI/514/3/5/1/1***, MLVA-Buenos Aires.

Both *Damia* and the division responsible for liaison with military attachés (Figure 4) were pivotal in South Africa-Paraguayan military interaction.[44] Some of the salient

issues under constant consideration between the intelligence organisations of the two countries included the following:

- The common intelligence problem of a communist threat;
- the exchange of syllabuses of intelligence and counter-intelligence courses by means of the military attachés as well as the attendance of applicable courses; and
- co-operation on the use or conduct of intelligence, especially using computers and crypto-analysis.[45]

Given the limited purchasing power, natural resource endowment and also the political system in Paraguay at the time, military relations with South Africa largely defined the nature and scope of the two country's interaction with each other. Most of the interaction was veiled in secrecy in order to avoid political embarrassment to Paraguay for associating with a *pariah* state. With the advent of democracy in South Africa and increased intolerance of undemocratic rule in South America, particularly among the Mercosur countries, relations between South Africa and Paraguay were bound to change.

2.3.2 Post-1994 Paraguay-South Africa military relations

The eminence enjoyed by the military establishment especially with regard to pursuing covert diplomatic relations, which could not be done in the overt political structures, waned and eventually came to an end when a new political dispensation was introduced in South Africa. Consequently, the office of South Africa's armed forces attaché in Paraguay was closed down. Since then, South Africa's armed forces attaché posted in Buenos Aires, Argentina, is also accredited to Paraguay as a non-resident attaché. Similarly, Paraguay no longer has any military representation in Pretoria.[46]

At end of 2001, there were still no military agreements between the two countries and none were being planned for the future either. Furthermore, only limited arms transfers, which are largely in the non-sensitive and non-lethal category, have taken place between the two countries since 1994.[47]

Despite political inexpediency and international condemnation, pre-1994 Paraguay-South Africa military relations were rooted in the inherent weakness of the political systems and the lack of industrial infrastructure in Paraguay. Paraguay had strong regional ambitions that could not be translated into action, owing simply to the fact that its neighbours were potential rivalries. Thus, South Africa presented an ideal opportunity to fulfil that ambition. However, it is noteworthy that it was not only the need for military industrial development, which prompted Paraguay to defy the international call for the isolation of South Africa, but also socio-economic factors. The strong bilateral military relations that existed prior to 1994 evaporated during the post-1994 restructuring and consolidation process of South Africa's foreign missions. The closing down of the South African embassy in Asunción demonstrated a change of direction by the post-1994 government of South Africa.

2.4 URUGUAY

Another country that had strong military relations with South Africa during the sanctions era was Uruguay. The general nature and scope of Uruguay's military relations with South Africa resembled, to a large extent, those between South Africa and Paraguay.

2.4.1 Pre-1994 Uruguay-South Africa military relations

Prior to 1994, the Uruguayan government maintained high-profile diplomatic-military relations with South Africa. There was general congruence in terms of their internal political policies as Uruguay was intermittently under military rule that was not very popular among the liberal democratic states. In South Africa the military establishment had excessive influence in the decision-making processes of government. Civil liberties were limited and some organisations were proscribed. Another aspect contributing to the unfavourable Western (particularly British) perception of Uruguay, stemmed from the latter's active support of Argentina's claim to the Falklands/Malvinas island. This was confirmed on 2 December 1974 when the Uruguayan delegate to the UN, J.L. Bruno, publicly expressed support for the Argentine aspiration to exercise sovereignty over the Falklands/Malvinas island, much to the dismay of Britain.[48]

South Africa's cordial relations with Uruguay, which were characterised by increased co-operation in the military sphere, were not being supported by most Uruguayans. This came to the fore when the Uruguayan military government closed one of the popular Protestant newspapers — *Mesajero Waldense* — which had published some information on the WCC. The Uruguayan protestant leader, Reverend Emilio Castro, believed that the government's hostility towards the WCC was mainly due to that organisation's opposition to South Africa's political system. Some prominent clerical members from South Africa such as Desmond Tutu and Alan Boesak were playing crucial roles in vilifying and criticising South Africa. The WCC members were barred from visiting South Africa and later Uruguay as well.[49]

South Africa's armed forces attachés enjoyed widespread acceptability and they normally paved way for non-military exchanges as well. For instance, in October 1976 a journal called *Latin America* reported that a group of industrialists and business people from South Africa came to visit Uruguay, Argentina, Brazil and Chile. While the discussions with Argentina were attended by representatives from mining companies such as Anglovaal and Union Corporation, and financial houses such as the South African Financial Corporation, the Afrikaanders Ltd, and the Royal Insurance, the discussions with the Uruguayans centred largely around military issues. The Chiefs of the Navy and the Air Force of both countries reportedly explored the possibility of South Africa investing in ship-building, fishing, mineral exploration and the aeronautical industry.[50]

Furthermore, there were reportedly discussions about contingency plans for possible white refugees coming to Uruguay and other neighbouring countries in the event of a take-over of government by a Black majority in South Africa. Both Argentina and Chile had indicated that they would be positively disposed towards such an eventuality. According to the Uruguayan daily *El país*, 10 000 Rhodesians had expressed interest in settling in Uruguay.[51] Bolivia was particularly enthusiastic about the prospects of hosting a large number of white immigrants from Namibia, Rhodesia and South Africa. This would be in reciprocation for a similar gesture by South Africa during the late 1970s when it attempted to secure financial assistance from the World Bank, the Inter-American Development Bank (IADB) and private organisations to settle 150 000 White

immigrants from Bolivia in South Africa between 1978 and 1988. There was neither acknowledgement nor denial of the allegations contained in the report. As South Africa was still facing sanctions at that time, this was understandable.[52]

Ironically, the complex national security management system that was developed by South Africa during the late seventies and early eighties, seems to have been significantly influenced by its relations with Uruguay. This stems from the resemblance of that country's national security system to that of South Africa. The main area of considerable similarity was the psychological warfare or the 'hearts and minds' campaign that was waged inside and outside South Africa by the MID. The whole of the Uruguayan Armed Forces was responsible for specific civic action activities. Each ministry, government office and municipality had on its staff an armed forces officer, responsible to the Joint Staff. The Army was responsible for building roads, bridges, railways; providing transport in the outlying areas and also helping in the construction of schools and providing bathrooms and other facilities to such schools.[53] The Navy helped with oceanographic, hydrographical and meteorological services. These services included co-operating with the municipality of Montevideo in obtaining several oceanographical parameters for the final layout of the sewerage system of Montevideo, and the preservation and improvement of beaches. The Uruguayan Navy also helped in public schools with regard to repairing buildings and providing community aid to the islanders of the Uruguay River.[54]

The Uruguayan military establishment had tremendous influence in the political affairs of the country. This became even more evident after the Human Rights Conference held in Geneva during February and March 1977. During that conference Uruguay voted against South Africa and the latter's armed forces attaché expressed his disappointment over the situation. Uruguay's Director of *Servicio Inteligencia del Estado* (S.I.D.E) — their Military Intelligence — General Amauri Prantl, assured South Africa's armed forces attaché that the "military were taking steps to re-organise the Uruguayan Department of Foreign Affairs."[55] By that time, South Africa-Uruguay military relations were so cordial that Uruguay was also contemplating sending a military attaché to Pretoria. However, apart from possible international condemnation of such a move, there were prohibitive financial implications which the Uruguayan government was not in a position to bear.[56] Furthermore, the Uruguayan government,

and the military establishment in particular, were prepared to flout sanctions and the arms embargo imposed on South Africa. There were already talks about possible transfers of small arms from South Africa to Uruguay. Both the South African Ambassador and armed forces attaché to Uruguay were positively disposed towards this possibility.[57] A similar request was once again made by the Uruguayan Navy during the official visit by South Africa's military intelligence officers to that country. The Uruguayan Navy was also keen to purchase South Africa's fighting vessels.[58] It is not clear if such transactions eventually materialised or not, as these were shrouded in a veil of secrecy.

One of the main areas of co-operation between the militaries of South Africa and Uruguay was training. Military training was seen, especially by South Africa, as an important dimension of its efforts to acquire knowledge and strengthen political and cultural ties between the two countries. There was, however, growing unease about the level of openness that should govern such training to foreigners. Consequently, in early 1983, the SA Department of Defence decided that given the fact that the "SD (Staff Duties) course is now largely based on the Army strategy and other classified material, it is suggested that foreigners should only be allowed to attend a part of the SD course."[59] While this did not only indicate a relative lack of mutual trust, it also demonstrated that for South Africa these exchange programmes were essentially symbolic in nature.

The syllabus of the SD course in which the Uruguayans were particularly interested, comprised the following subjects: communication; management; organisation of the SADF; strategy; combat services; operations theory; intelligence theory; finance; logistics; personnel; specialist arms; formal training and finishing including the planning cycle at divisional level; counter-insurgency (COIN) and counter-revolutionary warfare; and joint warfare. The last three subjects were not available to foreigners. The other subjects from which foreigners were barred were: strategy (which included the utilisation of power bases); South African philosophy; infantry; armour; artillery; engineers and signals.[60] This shows that despite close military-diplomatic relations between the two countries, South Africa remained cautious as there was always an eternal fear that governments from the then friendly nations could change and the country's operational secrets would have been lost for ever. By December 1983,

South Africa had already provided military training to Uruguayan troops at the SA Naval Staff course and through secondment to the SA Navy.[61]

As already indicated, the MID spearheaded South Africa's diplomatic relations in South America. During their visit to Uruguay in August 1984, the MID had formal and informal discussions with their Uruguayan counterparts. The issues that dominated the discussions revolved around the following aspects:

- Establishing the office of the military attaché in Pretoria;
- exchange of photographs of East bloc fishing boats and military ships in the RSA's and Uruguay's territorial waters;
- exchange of intelligence with regard to methods to counter infiltration of Russian spies in the respective countries' armed forces;
- the possible visit by Uruguayan officers to South Africa in order to see the weapons confiscated from the liberation movement (presumably of Russian origin);
- the possibility of Uruguayan technical personnel visiting South Africa in order to help the latter in improving the SADF's electronic warfare capacity; and
- the SADF had to make the syllabuses of its intelligence and counter-intelligence courses available to Uruguay.[62]

These undertakings demonstrated the cordiality of military relations between South Africa and Uruguay. However, by mid-1986 there were increasing indications that South Africa's military representation in Uruguay was being threatened. This was communicated by the South African armed forces attaché during August 1986. There was going to be a United Nations sitting during which the question of Uruguay-South Africa relations would be discussed. It was against this background that the Uruguayan Police Chief called in the South African mission head to inform him that Uruguay would like to indicate to the UN that South Africa's military representation in Uruguay was no longer acceptable. The manner in which the matter was communicated to the South African officials indicated that Uruguay still valued their relations with South Africa. The South African government responded by informing its missions that it was

not prepared to be embarrassed by the dismissal of its military attaches from the South American countries. Therefore, it was decided, if the situation allowed, that the incumbent attaché should stay until December 1986. However, it was further decided that if the indications from the Uruguayan government were that they wanted to take action against South Africa's armed forces attaché, the latter would have to withdraw as soon as possible in order to keep the initiative. The South African armed forces attaché suggested to the South African Ambassador that there should be no further accreditation requested from the Uruguayan government, unless there were indications that such a request would be treated favourably. Furthermore, it was suggested that South Africa should not attempt to place an undercover military operative in that country.[63] Obviously, Uruguay, which was also democratising, wanted to comply with the international community's call for compliance with the UN resolutions regarding sanctions against South Africa.

2.4.2 Post-1994 Uruguay-South Africa military relations

With the closure of South Africa's diplomatic and military representatives' offices in Uruguay, the relations remained strained but not hostile. When the new political dispensation was ushered in South Africa, no effort was made to re-open the offices. Instead, the South African defence attaché posted in Buenos Aires is also accredited to Uruguay as a non-resident attaché. Uruguay only closed its defence attaché's office in South Africa in December 1999.[64] It could be argued that the motivation for such a step was largely based on considerations other than dissatisfaction with South Africa's political system. These considerations could include financial issues and the fact that South Africa does not have a resident defence attaché in Uruguay, which could possibly be perceived by the latter as an indication of limited strategic or political value that the former attaches to Uruguay.

By the end of 2001, there were no military agreements existing between South Africa and Uruguay nor are there any being planned for the future. It is notable that, with the exception of Argentina and Brazil, South Africa seems to approach Paraguay and Uruguay on issues of common interest within the framework of Mercosur.

Since their inception, South Africa-Uruguayan military relations have always been biased in favour of South Africa. This was largely owing to the relatively higher level of economic and military development in South Africa and the corresponding dependence of Uruguay on South Africa with regard to certain technical military expertise. South Africa prudently exploited these weaknesses until the democratisation process started in Uruguay. It is notable that Uruguay's change in political approach to South Africa was in line with the actions of other South American countries.

2.5 BOLIVIA

For a long time, Bolivia had been confronted with a violent opposition to its political system, which was characterised by the preponderant role of the military. Civil liberties were limited and human rights not protected. Under such circumstances the security forces, especially the military establishment, play a crucial role both in propping up the incumbent government and in ensuring law and order, which normally gravitates towards quashing opposition. Political parties and labour unions were prohibited.[65]

By early 1975, the South African Armed Forces Attaché, Captain (SAN) J.C. Ferris, situated in Buenos Aires, reported to the Chief of Staff Intelligence in Pretoria that Bolivia had "curtailed press freedom to extreme levels."[66] This followed the expulsion of two Catholic priests, both Belgian nationals and members of the Peace Commission, who had been arrested on 14 December 1974 for participating in the publication of a pamphlet — *The Valley Massacre* — which described the clashes between the military and peasants. The pamphlet claimed that over 100 people had died while the official figures stood at 13 killed and 16 injured.[67] The Bolivian government was facing a formidable challenge from the extreme leftist guerrilla movement known as the Union of Poor Peasants (UCAPO), particularly dominant in the province of Santa Cruz.[68]

The pre-1994 relations between South Africa and Bolivia should be seen against the background of serious internal political challenges to the two governments; the status of Bolivia as a land-locked country; and both countries having hostile relations with the neighbours in their respective sub-regions. As already indicated, the fact that the

political system of Bolivia was not acceptable to the international community and the subsequent suppression of civil liberties, made South Africa a natural ally.

During the late 1970s and early 1980s, the Bolivian government adopted a foreign policy that was based on non-alignment. In this respect, the government argued that it would like to establish and maintain cordial diplomatic relations with all the countries of the world. For South Africa, this presented a window of opportunity for strengthening its case in the South American region.[69]

Furthermore, being a land-locked country, Bolivia relied on co-operation from its immediate neighbours to assist in the transportation of its import and export commodities. Thus, Bolivia had to ensure friendly relations with Chile and Peru.[70] However, this was not going to be easy because both Chile and Peru were on numerous occasions on the brink of going to war against each other. In fact, at some stage the Centre of National Studies (CEN), whose members are graduates of the School of Higher Military Studies, published a document in which the need to arm in self-defence was stressed. This was in view of a possible war between Chile and Peru.[71] Bolivia succeeded in securing access to the port of Montevideo after Bolivian President Hugo Banzer paid an official three-day visit to Uruguay. In terms of the trade and economic agreements signed on 24 July 1975 Bolivia was ceded a free zone in the port of Montevideo.[72] Bolivia had lost access to sea during the Atlantic War of 1879-1883 involving Bolivia, Chile and Peru.[73] The relations between these countries remained lukewarm until August 1975 when Chile acceded to Bolivian President Banzer's proposal that an organisation of mineral-producing countries be established. In his Five-Point Plan, President Banzer proposed that Bolivia should have access to the sea. Venezuela's President Perez supported the idea quite strongly, while Chile, which was represented by Chief of Staff General Sergio Arellano, announced that it would be prepared to sign a non-aggression pact with both Bolivia and Peru.[74]

Thus, when South Africa started strengthening military relations with Bolivia in the early to mid-1970s, the latter was in the process of normalising diplomatic relations with her neighbours. Facilitating the realisation of good military relations with Bolivia was the fact that most of the neighbouring countries were already in good diplomatic standing with South Africa. It is not unlikely that South Africa exerted indirect pressure

through its South American allies to gain favour with Bolivia. This is against the background that, at that stage, there really was no immediate strategic value that South Africa attached to Bolivia. But it was argued that military relations would facilitate the process of negotiating agreements with other South American countries through Bolivia. In fact, South Africa's relations with Bolivia were much stronger in military than in political and diplomatic terms. During early 1983, in correspondence between the armed forces attaché in Montevideo and the Chief of the SADF, it was stated that the "SADF representation in Uruguay and Bolivia should not be seen in isolation but in a regional context … Owing to the fact that South Africa's missions in Uruguay and Bolivia were understaffed, there was a slow flow of information into the country. Thus, the role of armed forces attachés in countries such as Bolivia and Uruguay should not restrict themselves to military issues."[75] This instruction enabled armed forces attachés in those countries to become involved in political and economic matters.

The SADF constantly received requests from Bolivia for military training. This was despite the fact that there was a wave of democratisation processes taking place within Bolivia. By early 1983, the diplomatic and political situation was not in favour of South Africa as the Bolivian Embassy in Pretoria had been 'temporarily closed'. Similarly, other countries' embassies in Pretoria followed suit. Thus, the SADF was always willing to help Bolivia with military training in order to maintain some kind of military representation in that country, regardless of who was in government. In fact, the SADF offered to carry the full financial burden of such training for Bolivia, which was contrary to the standing policy of reciprocity or *quid pro quo* approach.[76]

The period of cordial relations with Bolivia came to an end when Dr. H. Siles Zuazo won the elections in June 1982 thus becoming the Bolivian president. However, Siles's *Unidad Democratica Popular* (UDP) failed to obtain an absolute majority. Siles' victory was not in line with South Africa's hopes that General Banzer would win. General Banzer was admired by Pretoria because he was inclined towards the West in his political and economic outlook. The Bolivian mission in Pretoria and that of South Africa in La Paz were opened during his term and there were even talks of upgrading Bolivian representation in Pretoria to ambassadorial level. Until then, Bolivia's voting record in the UN on issues involving South Africa showed a moderate stance, except in the case of the South West Africa/Namibia question where Bolivia followed the Third

World position. However, relations with South Africa came to an abrupt end when the Siles government took over the reigns of power. In his first speech in the UN General Assembly, Siles launched a scathing attack on South Africa, demanding the tightening of UN sanctions against South Africa and the immediate independence of Namibia. Before the Siles government took over power, Bolivia was the only country among the Andean Pact countries that had diplomatic relations with South Africa. Consequently, South Africa withdrew quietly from the country without even attempting to revive military relations as had been the case during the previous dispensation.[77]

The Siles government did not last even a year as it was overthrown by a military *coup* (Bolivia's 200th *coup d'état* in 160 years) under the leadership of General Luis Garcia Meza. Despite protestations and threats of sanctions by the Andean Community and the Organisation of American States (OAS), countries such as Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Paraguay, Uruguay and El Salvador recognised the military government.[78] Confusion reigned in Bolivian national politics until general elections were held in 1985.

In the tightly contested elections of 14 July 1985, where General Banzer, Siles Zuazo and Victor Paz Estenssoro were candidates, Estenssoro emerged victorious. Once again, victory by Estenssoro flew in the face of South Africa's desire to have General Banzer at the helm again. It was not the first time that Estenssoro became the president of Bolivia. He was the president in 1952-1956, and again in 1960-1964, but his last term was interrupted by a military *coup d'tat*. However, the simmering tensions and instability in Bolivia gave South Africa some hope that its military assistance, of any kind, might once again be solicited. Tensions emanated from then dubious economic and monetary policies of the Bolivian government and there was serious disagreement even among cabinet members about them. Until September 1985, the local currency (Peso) was pegged against the US Dollar. But this resulted in precarious devaluations, thus plunging the country's economy into trouble. On 21 January 1986, the whole cabinet resigned, thus enabling President Estenssoro to form a new one. The diplomatic/military relations with South Africa never improved with the new administration.[79]

The advent of democracy in South Africa did not change the situation drastically in terms of diplomatic and military relations and the post-1994 South African government

did not open an embassy in La Paz. Thus South Africa does not have a resident military attaché in Bolivia, and nor does Bolivia have one in South Africa. By the end of 2001, there were no military agreements in existence or due for future consideration. However, the absence of direct diplomatic/military representation does not reflect any negative perceptions of one another but is largely based on other considerations, including financial constraints. With the possibility of Bolivia becoming a fully-fledged member of Mercosur, South Africa may have considered it more prudent to deal with that country within a collective framework. It is undeniably true that being a landlocked country and also having lukewarm to strained diplomatic relations with its immediate neighbours, Bolivia is bound to attempt to cast its diplomatic net much wider to include most countries in the Andean Community and beyond, including South Africa. However, this may not always be possible due to limited resources. It is not clear as to what the actual or perceived strategic value of Bolivia was to South Africa in the period prior to 1994. Nevertheless, Bolivia had a relationship of dependency with South Africa, which was optimally exploited by the latter for political purposes.

2.6 CHILE

One of the most enduring military relations that South Africa ever had with a South American country, was with Chile. As was the case with Bolivia, Paraguay and Uruguay, South Africa's diplomatic relations with Chile were spearheaded by the military establishment. Through military intelligence structures both countries managed to achieve what they could not achieve through overt, non-military structures and processes.

2.6.1 Pre-1994 Chile-South Africa military relations

Barely a decade after South Africa had declared a Republic, an active campaign was launched to win support from the like-minded countries across the South Atlantic Ocean. As was the case with other South American countries, South Africa found a reliable and compatible ally in the form of Chile. At that stage Chile was under a military government with General Augusto Pinochet as the Supreme Head. On 17 December 1974, the military junta passed a decree in terms of which General Pinochet was declared President.[80]

The military relations between Chile and South Africa went from strength to strength as these were not clearly discernible from political activities. Of primary concern to Chile, as was the case with South Africa, was the isolation by the international community which impacted negatively not only on its socio-economic development but also on the military sphere. The latter aspect was particularly crucial as Chile still had unresolved conflicts with neighbouring Argentina over some islands on the Beagle Channel. Further aggravating the situation was the imposition of an arms embargo by the US against Chile, together with Argentina, Bolivia, Brazil, Guatemala, Paraguay, Peru and Uruguay in 1977. The US insisted that these Southern Cone countries should improve their human rights record before arms embargoes could be lifted.

South Africa was already subject to the UN-imposed arms embargo. However, the international political situation was such that the US could not afford to have the whole South Atlantic region falling under Soviet influence. The Cuban crisis of 1961 was still too fresh in the collective memory of the Americans. When Ronald Reagan became the US president in 1981, he wanted to review the prohibitions on arms transfers that had been introduced by the Carter administration. Consequently, the Reagan administration introduced legislation to repeal the ban on US arms transfers to Argentina and Chile. The Congress only agreed to the legislation with the proviso that a 'presidential certification' was provided as proof that such countries had made significant progress on human rights. However, these processes came to an end in March 1982 with the outbreak of the Falklands/Malvinas War. With the election of Raúl Alfonsín as a civilian president on 10 December 1983, Argentina certified that sufficient progress had been made in the human rights area. Bolivia, Brazil and Uruguay followed Argentina. Thus, Chile (under General Pinochet) and Paraguay (under General Alfredo Stroessner) stood alone as military regimes, and continued to be subjected to the arms embargo.[81] It was against this background that political, but particularly, military relations with South Africa, were crucial for Chile.

The main areas of interest for Chile in South Africa largely concerned arms production and arms transfers, and also military training. As was the case with other South American countries, South Africa-Chile political and military relations were conducted with significant assistance of the MID. The military intelligence structures held regular

bilateral conferences during which threats to each other were analysed and individual requirements (such as training and arms transfers) were discussed. By 1983, the student exchange programme was already at an advanced stage (Table 17). Sixteen SADF members in the ranks varying from Midshipman to Commandant (now known as Lieutenant-Colonel) had already been trained in Chile.

In line with the standing policy of the SADF that military training had to be symbiotic and complementary, the SADF had specific training requirements which were not identical to those of the Chileans. The SADF seemed to be interested in specific areas of training, while the Chilean Armed Forces wanted to seize every opportunity for

Table 17: CHILEAN MILITARY TRAINING PRESENTED TO SOUTH AFRICAN STUDENTS IN CHILE, (AS AT DECEMBER 1983)

Nature of Course	Rank Group	No. of Students
Air Force Staff Course	Commandant; Major	2
Training on board ship	Midshipman; Lieutenant (SAN)	2
Mounted Training	Lieutenant; Captain	2
Attendance of naval exercise	Lieutenant-Commander	1
Attachment to Mirage Squadron	Major	1
Intelligence Courses	Sergeant; Captain; Major	6
Special Operations	Captain	1
Command and Staff Course	Lieutenant-Commander	1

Source: SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo, 9 December 1983.

training in every area of warfare. By December 1983, Chilean Armed Forces personnel had attended the following SADF courses[82]:

- SA Army Command and Staff course.
- Strikecraft training.
- Maintenance of Mirage III aircraft.
- Artillery courses.
- Infantry training.
- Sea training.

- Special forces training.
- Strikecraft gunnery course.
- Mirage operational training.

During the bilateral intelligence conference that was held in Chile in August 1984, both parties expressed satisfaction with the level of co-operation, particularly with regard to exchange of students. The SADF would also identify intelligence courses that were deemed suitable for Chilean students. There was a general feeling that more emphasis should be placed on technical co-operation between the two countries. To this effect, Chile wanted to second personnel to the SADF for electronic warfare training during the course of 1985.[83]

As military relations became stronger and mutual trust grew, the SADF increasingly became more eager to offer the Chileans an extended list of opportunities. During 1985, the SADF offered the following training courses to Chile:

- SA Army Command and Staff course.
- Gun Position Officer/Troop Leaders course (SA Artillery – Field Ordnance Position Commander Art 8534).
- Troop commanders course (SA Ordnance Artillery Troop Commander Art 8515).
- Battle group commanders course.
- Unit commanders (DTKS 8501 and 8502).
- Radar section commanders course (Radar Troop Commander), presented by the SA Army.
- Section commander meteorology, presented by the SA Army.
- Senior image interpretation course, presented by the SA Air Force.
- Operational training for Operations Room personnel, presented by the SA Air Force.
- Interrogation course, presented by Military Intelligence Division.
- An advanced intelligence course, also presented by Military Intelligence Division.[84]

From the list of courses presented, it is evident that military training tended to cover almost the whole spectrum of warfare, namely, ranging from information gathering and interpretation to operational effectiveness and command and control.

With the ascendance to power of F.W. de Klerk as President of South Africa, the political landscape of the country was irreversibly changed. For many years the military establishment in South Africa was highly influential in the political decision-making processes. One of the significant changes that President De Klerk made immediately after he took over the reigns of power was to confine the military establishment to military issues and to conduct a massive 'clean-up' in the administration. This had a far-reaching impact, as the country's foreign policy was no longer going to be largely determined or influenced by military imperatives alone. Thus, under these circumstances, Chile's political and military relations with South Africa waned. South Africa was increasingly being accepted into the international fold, and could therefore not afford being associated with Chile in the same manner as was the case before the democratisation process commenced.

2.6.2 Post-1994 Chile-South Africa military relations

Military relations between Chile and South Africa can be viewed along various dimensions, including military-diplomatic representation; visits by military personnel from each country; military training; and co-operation or interaction regarding defence-related industries.

2.6.2.1 *Military representation*

Despite the drastic change in the political situation in South Africa which prompted the revisiting of military relations with Chile, military interaction between the two countries continued even after 1994, *albeit* scaled down in intensity. South Africa's military representation in Chile continued until December 2000 when the armed forces attaché's office in Santiago was closed down (Table 18). While the closing down of that office coincided with the Department of Foreign Affairs' world-wide restructuring of diplomatic missions due

Table 18: SOUTH AFRICA'S MILITARY ATTACHÉS IN CHILE

Name	Capacity/Designation	Period
Col C.J. Saaiman	Armed Forces Attaché	December 1984 – December 1988
Col A. de S Hendriks	Armed Forces Attaché	December 1988 – December 1992
Cdr J.J. Viljoen	Naval Attaché	December 1990 – December 1992
Col P.J. Swart	Armed Forces Attaché	December 1992 – December 1994
Col J.J. van Heerden	Armed Forces Attaché	December 1994 – December 1997
Capt (SAN) A.H. de Vries	Armed Forces Attaché	December 1997 – December 2000
Closing Defence Office		December 2000

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

to financial constraints and other strategic considerations, it could be argued that the mere fact that Chile and South Africa used to have secret agreements on how to deal with their political adversaries, could have caused the decision to be taken with relative ease.

Ironically, contrary to South Africa's decision to close down the armed forces attaché's office in Santiago, Chile's military representation in South Africa has appreciably intensified. While South Africa used to have only one military representative for all arms of service, Chile's military representation has since 1995 been quite significant (Table 19). Unlike Argentina and Brazil, Chile's air attaché is always independent, whereas the Army is always coupled with the Navy.

Table 19: CHILEAN MILITARY ATTACHÉS IN SOUTH AFRICA

Name	Capacity/Designation	Period
Brig J.L. Pacheco	Army and Naval Attaché	January 1994 – July 1995
Col Bodadilla	Air Attaché	January 1994 – January 1995
Brig V.A Rojas Martinez	Army and Naval Attaché	January 1995 – January 1997
Col M. Bascuñan	Air Attaché	January 1995 – January 1997
Col P.V. Cartoni	Military and Naval Attaché	January 1997 – January 1998
Col P.V.C. Viale	Army and Air Attaché	January 1997 – July 1998
Col J. Anabalon	Air Attaché	January 1997 – January 1998
Col C.M.E. Solar	Military and Naval Attaché	July 1998 – January 2000
Col F. Gonzales	Air Attaché	January 1999 – December 2000

Col J.O. Valenzuela	Military and Naval Attaché	February 2000 – July 2001*
Col J. Cancino	Air Attaché	January 2001 – to date*
Col R. Toro	Military and Naval Attaché	July 2001 – to date*

Note: * Denotes "as at the end of 2002"

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

2.6.2.2 *Military visits*

Since the advent of democracy in South Africa in 1994, there have been quite a number of high-profile visits by South African military personnel to Chile. In 1997, the SA Naval personnel were invited to Chile to help them develop their 76/62mm OTO MELARA gun-overhauling course. It is possible that the invitation stemmed from the interaction between the two countries prior to 1994. As already indicated, during the mid-1980s South Africa used to provide, among others, artillery training to Chilean armed forces. In October 1997, two SA Air Force members visited Chilean Naval facilities and later attended the Digital Battlefield symposium. The SA Chief of the Air Force paid a goodwill visit to Santiago over the period 23-29 March 1998. The visit was reportedly a great success. During October 1999, some members of the Policy and Planning division of the Defence Secretariat attended a Defence Seminar that was held in Chile and the Chief of SA Air Force, together with some members from Armscor and DENEL, attended the "FIDAE 2000" in Chile during March 2000. In April of the same year, the Chief of Joint Operations attended the Naval Control of Shipping Critique conference and in October, SA Naval personnel attended the CHRIS (hydrographic) meeting. In December 2000, the Chief of the SA Navy attended the EXPONAVAL.[85]

While there seems to have been a number of high-profile visits by SANDF personnel to Chile, this does not seem to have been reciprocated. In fact, by the end of 2001 the only visit by a prominent member of the Chilean Armed Forces was the one which took place in March 2000 when the Chief of the SA Navy hosted the Chief of Chilean Navy Procurement, Admiral O. Torres, on behalf of African Defence Systems (ADS), which is one of South Africa's companies in the defence-related industry.[86]

2.6.2.3 *Military training*

It is in the area of military training where most of the interaction has taken place. During mid-2001 military training to Chilean students was presented by the SA Air Force. This reflected a drastic departure from the pre-1994 student exchanges, which were largely hosted

Table 20: SANDF TRAINING PRESENTED TO CHILEAN ARMED FORCES AFTER 1994

Type of Training	Period	Arm of Service	Number of Students
Cheetah D Simulator	15 January – 15 February 1996	Air Force	5
Cheetah D Simulator	3-28 January 1997	Air Force	6
Cheetah D Simulator	29 May – 24 June 1998	Air Force	6
Cheetah D Simulator	6 July – 1 August 1998	Air Force	6
Cheetah D Simulator	30 April – 28 May 1999	Air Force	5
Cheetah D Simulator	4 June – 2 July 1999	Air Force	5

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

by the SA Army. From 1994 to mid-2001, the SANDF had already trained at least 33 Chileans in Cheetah D Simulator course (Table 20). This could be an indication of the confidence in the SANDF simulator training or an interest which could later result in the purchase of the Cheetah or its related components.

In line with the principle of reciprocity and complementarity, the military courses offered by the Chilean Armed Forces to the SANDF were largely in the area of naval co-operation (Table 21). It is undeniably true that there has been a reduction in the number and frequency of students and courses that are being exchanged between the two countries. Furthermore, with the closure of South Africa's defence attaché's office in Chile, it can only be expected that there would be a corresponding reduction in the intensity and frequency of training opportunities.

Table 21: CHILEAN MILITARY TRAINING PRESENTED TO THE SANDF PERSONNEL AFTER 1994

Type of Training	Year	Arm of Service
Surface Attachment	1995	Chilean Navy
Surface Attachment on *BE ESMERALDA*	1996	Chilean Navy
OTO Malara Gun Overhauling course	1997	Chilean Army
Helicopter Mountain Flying course	1999	Chilean Air Force

Source: Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

2.6.2.4 *Mutual agreements and defence industry co-operation*

The nature and scope of political support and political congruity normally guide much of the formal interaction between states. However, in the case of Chile-South Africa relations, it is noticeable that all the military training provided to each other's military organisations, was never preceded by a formal bilateral agreement between the two countries. This situation demonstrates without doubt the cordiality of relations between the two countries. There is a strong possibility that a defence co-operation agreement could be signed in the near future which would result in increased exchanges and more formal interaction.[87] It is not envisaged that the South African defence attaché's office in Santiago will be re-opened soon.

However, the signing of a defence co-operation agreement may have considerable impact on the defence-related industries. Most of the beneficiaries from the South African perspective would largely be in DENEL's Aviation wing. Aircraft components and flying training, including simulators, may be in demand in Chile. Chile's status as a significant potential export market for South Africa did not change after 1994. In 1997 alone, Chile imported R16,2 million worth of so-called SMSE and R805,000 worth of Non-Sensitive Equipment (NSE).[88] NSE includes "all support equipment usually utilised in the direct support of combat operations, and that has no inherent capability to kill or destroy. This could not be regarded as an indication of a reduced strategic value of South Africa by Chile, but the reality that there is increased fluidity in the arms export market. The new tendency includes counter-trade and skills-transfer clauses in the contracts for arms transfers which are such that only stronger and well-established arms suppliers are likely to survive. Strictly military effectiveness of weapon systems is no longer sufficient to secure military contracts. A cursory look at the inventories of most South American countries shows a strong presence of military hardware that

originates from high-profile global players in the arms production industry. Given all these factors, it remains to be seen if military relations between South Africa and the Mercosur countries can still be improved beyond the current levels of interaction to include aspects such as intelligence training, and technology transfer, especially in the area of ship-building.

Based on the above discussion, it is evident that military relations between South Africa and Chile remained relatively vibrant almost throughout the period when the former was still under UN sanctions. Main areas of interaction were military training and high-profile visits. The military intelligence communities from both countries facilitated most of the bilateral activities, including economic and political activities. While the use of military intelligence in diplomatic matters was not anomalous and unique to the Chile-South Africa relations alone, it could be argued that it has not helped the situation in re-normalising bilateral relations in the post-1994 era. The closure of the South African defence attaché's office in Santiago was a serious set-back to both countries' military relations. It is an irrefutable fact that with the ascendance of socio-economic issues, the military have assumed a low profile. This is particularly true in South Africa's relations with countries across the South Atlantic. However, it can be assumed that the level of interaction will, to a large extent, depend on the attractiveness of defence capabilities that each country in the Southern Cone possesses relative to South Africa, and *vice versa*.

3. THE NATURE OF MILITARY CAPABILITIES OF SOUTH AFRICA AND THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES

It remains important to determine whether the current level of military interaction between South Africa and the Mercosur countries is commensurate with the military capacity of individual countries. The main relevant indicators in this respect would be the military expenditure over the last few years and the size of their armed forces.

Consistent with the global trend, there has been a steady decline in the level of military expenditure among South American countries since the end of the Cold War. The Mercosur countries have managed to keep military expenditure below the accepted norm of two per cent of GDP. The associate members, namely, Bolivia and Chile, have not always succeeded in staying within the traditional norm. Unlike Bolivia whose military expenditure increased in 1997 and 1998, Chile has consistently maintained expenditure exceeding three per cent

(Table 22). South Africa on the other hand has since 1996, like other Mercosur countries, maintained the traditional norm of not exceeding two per cent.

Table 22: MILITARY EXPENDITURE OF MERCOSUR COUNTRIES AND SOUTH AFRICA (US$M) – 1995-2000, AND AS PERCENTAGE OF GDP

Country	1995	1996	1997	1998	1999	2000
Argentina	4 450 (1.7%)	4 210 (1.5%)	4 067 (1.4%)	3 964 (1.3%)	4 196 (1.5%)	4 524 (n/a)
Bolivia	144 (1.9%)	141 (1.8%)	168 (2.1%)	205 (2.4%)	154 (1.8%)	n/a (n/a)
Brazil	11 011 (1.5%)	9 499 (1.3%)	11 648 (1.5%)	10 976 (1.4%)	10 132 (1.3%)	14 866 (n/a)
Chile	2 091 (3.1%)	2 216 (3.2%)	2 244 (3.1%)	2 564 (3.5%)	2 259 (3.1%)	[1 747] (n/a)
Paraguay	[115] (1.4%)*	[116] (1.3%)*	113 (1.3%)	104 (1.2%)	88.7 (1.1%)	85.6 (n/a)
Uruguay	296 (1.5%)	282 (1.4%)	279 (1.3%)	272 (1.2%)	n/a (n/a)	n/a (n/a)
South Africa	2 691 (2.2%)	2 337 (1.8%)	2 151 (1.6%)	1 921 (1.4%)	1 833 (1.3%)	2 127 (1.1%)

Notes:

- All figures at constant 1998 prices and exchange rates
- "N/a" denotes "not available"
- [] and * denote "SIPRI estimate"

Source: Stockholm International Peace Research Institute (SIPRI). 2001. ***SIPRI Yearbook: Armaments, Disarmament and International Security***. Stockholm: Oxford University Press.

The general downward trend in budgetary allocations for defence forces world-wide, and in South America in particular, has had a tremendous impact on the force levels, force designs and force structures of many countries. While in South Africa there is tremendous pressure to downsize or 'rightsize', as it is popularly called, there is correspondingly high pressure to restructure and transform the armed forces in order to reflect the integration forces that are now part of the SANDF. As can be seen in Table 23, the Mercosur countries have a substantial portion of their populations under arms.[89] Brazil's military personnel has, in some

arms of service, more than the total number of people under arms for all Mercosur countries and South Africa combined. It could be argued that the size of Brazil's armed forces are commensurate with its economic capacity and geographical size, but it is not clear whether this is proportionate with the requirements for dealing with threats to national security. It is not inconceivable that the instability that exists in neighbouring Colombia has the potential to spill over into the bordering countries such as Brazil, Ecuador, Peru and Venezuela. It is against this background that these countries have stepped up their military presence on their common border with Colombia. For Brazil, one of the concerns pertains to the proper protection of the Amazon region. The Amazon region constitutes about 42 per cent of Brazil's land mass and is reputed to have vast mineral deposits and other valuable resources.

Consistent with the analyses of past and present geopoliticians, the Amazon is viewed as a key to achieving the country's destiny of *grandeza* (national greatness). Thus, the call for the internationalisation of the Amazon sparks negative reaction from the Brazilian population, especially the military establishment. Furthermore, the US's military activities in the neighbouring countries such as radar installations and military exercises are perceived as a 'military belt'" that is designed not only to combat the narcotics trade but also to monitor the activities of Brazil in the Amazon.[90]

There is also a perennial fear that the Colombian rebels could use the Amazon region as sanctuary, or for drug-trafficking and the illicit transfer of weapons. Thus, Brazil has started a US$1.4 billion project, called SIVAM (*Sistema de Vigilancia de Amazonia* — Amazon Region Surveillance System) which seeks to monitor the Amazon basin by using radar, early-warning aircraft and ground sensors. However, still more than 70 per cent of Brazil's total military budget goes to salaries and pensions. Since Argentina and Brazil do not perceive each other as rivalries or potential enemies in the region anymore, both countries consult regularly on defence matters within the Mercosur framework. Brazil has embarked on a US$3.5 billion programme that includes acquisition of new aircraft and helicopters and the upgrading of existing aircraft. Brazil's fleet of river patrol boats are to be upgraded to be able to carry helicopters. These would all be used to protect the Amazon region.[91]

Based on the data provided in Table 23, it is evident that Brazil probably will still continue to host a number of South African military students, simply because it has the resources and capacity to do so. The rationale for downsizing and/or closing the military attachés' offices in

some of the countries seems conspicuously self-evident. Some of the military services such as the air force or navy in some countries are largely symbolic and do not pose any threat to neighbouring countries. With the formation of Mercosur, there has been a significant increase in the trend where states depend on their neighbours or sub-regional structures to deter any attack against them. It could therefore be surmised that South Africa can expect increased military interaction on substantive issues mainly with Argentina, Brazil and Chile.

Table 23: UNIFORMED MILITARY PERSONNEL IN SOUTH AFRICA AND THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES, 2000/2001 (Excluding Civilians and Reserves)

	Army	Navy	Air Force	Paramilitary	*Total*
Argentina	41 400	17 200	12 500	31 240	**102 340**
Bolivia	25 000	3 500	3 000	37 100	**68 600**
Brazil	189 000	48 600	50 000	385 600	**673 200**
Chile	51 000	24 000	12 000	29 500	**116 500**
Paraguay	14 900	3 600	1 700	14 800	**35 000**
Uruguay	15 200	5 500	3 000	920	**24 620**
South Africa	42 490	5 190	9 640	5 290**	**62 610**
Total	**378 990**	**107 590**	**91 840**	**504 450**	**1 082 870**

Note: ** South Africa does not have paramilitary forces, but has the South African Military Health Service (SAMHS) as a fourth service (in addition to the Army, Air Force and the Navy).

Source: International Institute for Strategic Studies (IISS). 2000. ***The Military Balance, 2000/2001***. London: Oxford University Press.

4. CONCLUSION

The military relations between South Africa and the Mercosur countries have been determined by the nature of political systems in place. Both South Africa and most of the Mercosur countries have been under direct control or influence of their respective military establishments. During the Botha administration, the SADF had an undue influence in the political decision-making processes of the country and in some South American countries the military took over the reigns of power. When South Africa experienced UN-imposed sanctions, the countries now constituting Mercosur were being condemned by the international community due to their praetorian governments. Consequently, this provided an ideal environment for South Africa to find credible allies. However, prevalent praetorianism

in South America was not the only binding factor with South Africa, but their shared aversion towards communism was even more crucial. As will be discussed in the next chapter, it was this anti-communist stance on which future regional military co-operation in the South Atlantic was to be based.

The nature of pre-1994 military relations was largely in the areas of exchange programmes for training, diplomatic military representation, and arms transfers. Given the fact that South Africa was still subject to UN sanctions, transfers of weapons and related technologies were shrouded in secrecy. It is also noticeable that the countries which abrogated arms embargoes against South Africa were not necessarily those in South America alone, because South Africa had significant military relations with countries such as Israel, Republic of China (Taiwan) and the UK. Consequently, military training and military representation enjoyed priority. Even though the countries which later formed Mercosur provided limited military training to South Africa, it was the latter that played the role of a significant provider of military training on a larger scale than any of the relevant Southern Cone countries combined. Reputed for its operational effectiveness, South Africa provided combat and operational intelligence training to most of these countries. It is difficult to explain the asymmetries in the exchange and training programmes that South Africa had with the South American countries, despite the former's standing policy that military training would be provided on a the basis of reciprocity or a *quid pro quo* basis. However, it could be argued that South Africa stood to benefit more from being selectively generous in providing for the military needs of some countries.

Countries like Argentina and Brazil withdrew their official interaction with South Africa during the mid-1980s when the latter was already on the verge of transforming. With the advent of democracy in South Africa and the Mercosur countries, normal military relations were reinstated. When the South African Department of Foreign Affairs started a world-wide restructuring process of South Africa's diplomatic missions, it affected the country's military representation in some countries. Paraguay and Uruguay are being militarily represented by a defence attaché in Buenos Aires. Concerning training, most countries (such as Argentina) have not been sending many of their personnel to South Africa for training. It could be argued that there has been a realisation among most South American countries that South Africa is still grappling with contentious issues of integration, demobilisation and transformation. The SANDF itself has a massive backlog with regard to training due to the integration process.

As was the case with the previous chapters, this chapter has demonstrated the nature of bilateral interaction between South Africa and the countries that later formed Mercosur. While the previous chapters also identified various forms of multilateral co-operation in the security arena, this chapter has shown that co-operative regional security is best effected through genuine bilateral arrangements which are based on mutual or shared goals or threats. However, such arrangements should be sustainable in the long-term. The democratisation of South Africa and all the Mercosur countries brought about drastic changes in the strategic perception and the nature of bilateral and multilateral relations. This has resulted in the closing down of South Africa's diplomatic and military offices in countries such as Bolivia, Chile, Paraguay and Uruguay — notably the countries which were staunch allies of South Africa during the sanctions era.

Having discussed the various dimensions of potential and actual bilateral military co-operation between South Africa and the Mercosur countries, the next chapter analyses the military interaction of these countries within a regional framework. Its point of departure is that co-operative and collective security in the South Atlantic region is based on the understanding that the littoral countries of that region face virtually common threats in the form of sea piracy, drug-trafficking and potential environmental disasters. In order to counter these threats and to enhance confidence- and security-building measures (CSBMs) it is imperative that these countries learn to interact at operational level.

Thus, the next chapter identifies and discusses the historical forms of regional security co-operation that the countries on both sides of the South Atlantic Ocean have engaged in. These regional efforts include the attempts to establish the Southern Hemisphere Security Alliance, followed by the South Atlantic Treaty Organisation; the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic; and the possibility of establishing the South Atlantic Ocean Rim. It will also discuss the various joint military exercises in which the South Atlantic regional countries are involved. Throughout the discussion it will be emphasised that the participation of these countries in such joint military exercises are not necessarily by virtue of their membership to Mercosur. Furthermore, the significance of South Africa's participation in these exercises and the necessity for South Africa to engage these countries within the Mercosur framework, will also be accentuated. In addition, the role of extra-regional powers such as the US, the UK and

Russia will be discussed with a view to highlighting the complexity and nature of the strategic value of the South Atlantic region. The strategic value of the region will be viewed in political, economic and military terms.

REFERENCES

1 Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992. "The Forgotten Dimension: South African/Latin American Relations Past and Present." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 8, No. 2, September, p. 6.

2 Gamba-Stonehouse, V. 1989. ***Strategy in the Southern Oceans: A South American View***. London: Pinter Publishers, pp. 91-92.

3 *Ibid,* p. 92.

4 SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/1/1*** Chief of Defence Staff, 11 January 1968. See also SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/1/1*** Chief of Defence Staff, 31 January 1968.

5 SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4*** Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 3 February 1975.

6 SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4*** Armed Forces Attaché (Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 3 March 1975.

7 Leysens, A. 1992. "South Africa's Relations with Latin America (1966-1988)." ***Unisa Centre for Latin America Studies Occasional Paper***, Pretoria, No. 06, p. 37.

8 Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992, *op cit*, p. 9.

9 *Ibid,* p. 6.

10 SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 11, ***File WA/M/203/2/19***, Montevideo Intelligence Collection of Information Uruguay.

11 SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Military Attaché: Uruguay, Group 1, Box 1, ***File WA/M/3/1***, 9 May 1977.

12 SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1/13***, Montevideo Training Aid to Paraguay.

13 *Ibid.*.

14 Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

15 Roeloefse-Campbell, Z. 1996. "Argentinean defence specialist visits the centre". ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 12, No. 2, July – December, pp. 85-86.

16 Campbell, K. 2000. "Argentina at Africa Aerospace and Defence 2000 and SAAF 80." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 16, No. 2, p. 79.

17 Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

18 *Ibid.*

19 Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992. *op cit,* p. 6.

20 SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 26, ***File PARA/311/1/21***, Montevideo, June 1977.

21 *Ibid*.

22 Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1995. "Brazil's New Role in South and Southern Africa: An Interview with Luiz Felipe Lampreia." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vo. 11, No. 2, p. 51.

[23] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 4, ***File WA/M/105/11/B***, Montevideo.

[24] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[25] Campbell, K. 2000. "South African Navy Participates in Fleet Review Commemorating 500th Anniversary of the Discovery of Brazil." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 16, No. 2, pp. 72-73.

[26] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[27] www.dfa.gov.za/ for-relations/bilateral/ brazil.htm.

[28] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[29] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992. *op cit,* p. 8.

[30] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1995. "Brazil's New Role in South and Southern Africa: An Interview with Luiz Felipe Lampreia." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vo. 11, No. 2, p. 51.

[31] Sköns, E, et al. *op cit,* p. 311.

[32] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence, Directorate Conventional Arms Control, 26 August 1998, Pretoria. See also, Khanyile, M.B. 2000. "South Africa's Arms Transfers in 1997: Morality and Reality." ***Africa Insight***, Vol. 29, No. 3-4, p. 28.

[33] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[34] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4*** Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 11 February 1975.

[35] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Intelligence, 6 January 1974.

[36] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, ***File G/LIA/3/4*** (Argentinié), Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 13 September 1975.

[37] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4*** (Argentinié), Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 31 March 1975.

[38] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4*** (Argentinié)***)***, Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 12 June 1975.

[39] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 26, ***File PARA/311/5***, Montevideo.

[40] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 26, ***File PARA/311/1/2***1, Montevideo, 18 July 1977.

[41] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo, 9 December 1983.

[42] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1/13***, Montevideo Training Aid to Paraguay.

[43] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 3, Box 1, ***File AMI/514/3/5/1/1***, MLVA-Buenos Aires.

[44] *Ibid*.

[45] *Ibid.*

[46] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[47] *Ibid.*

[48] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Chief of the Army, Group 39, ***File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 7 January 1975.

[49] *Buenos Aires Herald* (Buenos Aires), 6 February 1975.

[50] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Military Attaché: Uruguay, Group 1, Box 3, ***File WA/M/3/3***, Intelligence Uruguay & Other Countries, and 'Atlantic: Latin Laager?' 1976. ***Latin America***, Vol. X, No. 49, 17 December, p. 390.

[51] *Ibid.*

[52] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* p. 61.

[53] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Military Attaché: Uruguay, Group 1, Box 2, ***File WA/M/1/6***, Uruguay Army.

[54] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Military Attaché: Uruguay, Group 1, Box 2, ***File WA/M/1/7***, Uruguay Rou Armada Nacional Navy.

[55] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Military Attaché: Uruguay, Group 1, Box 2, ***File WA/M/1/4***, Uruguay Local Visits.

[56] *Ibid.*

[57] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Military Attaché: Uruguay, Group 1, Box 1, ***File WA/M/1/5***, Uruguay Military Equipment.

[58] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 3, Box 1, ***File AMI/514/3/5//1/1***, MLVA-Buenos Aires.

[59] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo.

[60] *Ibid.*

[61] *Ibid.*

[62] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 3, Box 1, ***File AMI/514/3/5/1/1***, MLVA-Buenos Aires.

[63] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 15, ***File WA/M/203/2/19/1***, Montevideo.

[64] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[65] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, ***File G/LIA/3/4*** (Argentinié), Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 14 August 1975.

[66] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, ***File G/LIA/3/4*** (Argentinié), Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 31 March 1975.

[67] *Ibid.*

[68] SANDF Archives (Documentation), Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, ***File G/LIA/3/4*** (Argentinié), Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 10 June 1975.

[69] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1/13***, Montevideo.

[70] *Ibid.*

[71] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 39, ***File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence.

[72] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, ***File G/LIA/3/4*** (Argentinié), Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 6 August 1975.

[73] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit*, pp. 12, 15.

[74] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, ***File G/LIA/3/4*** (Argentinié), Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 3 September 1975.

[75] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 4, ***File WA/M/105/11/B***, Montevideo.

[76] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo, 18 February 1983.

[77] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 16, ***File WA/B/203/2/20/1***, Montevideo, 5 January 1983.

[78] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* pp. 26-27.

[79] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 16, ***File WA/B/203/2/20/1***, Montevideo.

[80] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 39, ***File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 10 January 1974.

[81] Atkins, G.P. 1989. ***Latin America in the International Political System***. Oxford: Westview Press, pp. 130, 292.

[82] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo, 9 December 1983.

[83] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 3, Box 1, ***File AMI/514/3/5/1***, MLVA-Buenos Aires.

[84] SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre), Group 2, Box 1, ***File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo.

[85] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[86] *Ibid*.

[87] *Ibid.*

[88] Information provided by the South African Department of Defence, Directorate Conventional Arms Control, 26 August 1998, Pretoria. See also, Khanyile, M.B. 2000. *op cit*, p. 28.

[89] International Institute for Strategic Studies (IISS). 2000. ***The Military Balance, 2000/2001***. London: Oxford University Press.

[90] Martins, D. 1995. "Brazil - The Armed Forces of a Regional Superpower." ***Jane's Intelligence Review Yearbook: The World in Conflict 1994/95***. Coulsdon: Jane's Information Group Ltd, p. 141.

[91] Sköns, E, et al. "Military Expenditure and Arms Production", in Stockholm International Peace Research Institute (SIPRI). 2001. ***SIPRI Yearbook: Armaments, Disarmament and International Security***. Stockholm: Oxford University Press, pp. 263-264, 278-279, 284-285.

CHAPTER FIVE

MULTILATERAL SECURITY CO-OPERATION IN THE SOUTH ATLANTIC REGION

1. INTRODUCTION

The large expanse of oceanic waters separating Africa and South America are now viewed as bridges that need to be strengthened on all fronts, that is politically, economically, socially and in the security sphere. It is therefore not surprising that South Africa's attempts to engage her neighbours across the Atlantic Ocean are intensifying. While it is true that some interaction, especially in the diplomatic arena, takes place on the mainland of the countries involved, it is equally true that the main area of concern is the security of the vast area covered by the contiguous waters of the ocean. It is also critical to note that these waters are the navigation routes for many other countries, which may affect (both positively and negatively) the way that such security is ensured in the South Atlantic region. To this effect, countries on both sides of the Atlantic Ocean have to take cognisance of other extra-regional powers that have a direct or indirect interest in the region. There are eternal fears that the region could be used in future as a battle theatre for nuclear exchanges as almost occurred during the Cold War, or even be used for nuclear testing of weapons of mass destruction. It could also be used to transport dangerous materials that, in the event of an accident through negligence, ignorance or sabotage, would seriously affect the littoral states. In addition to these fears, the region provides the lifeline or umbilical cord that links countries on both sides of the ocean. Thus, in economic terms, there is a need to protect the environment, and combat trans-oceanic criminal activities such as drug-trafficking, sea piracy and marine poaching.

The previous chapters have demonstrated the nature of the interaction between South Africa and the Mercosur member countries in the economic and military spheres. Most of the activities discussed take place on a bilateral basis and also largely on the mainland of the countries concerned. However, this chapter seeks to highlight the geographic nature of the South Atlantic region and the totality of activities that involve all the littoral states in the region. It is also important that the South Atlantic region be clearly demarcated both for

analytical purposes and also because potential conflicts emanate from the various interpretations of the geographic parameters of the region, and how it extends into Antarctica. It further identifies possible areas that could have a potential for conflict and the mechanisms that have been developed to deal with them. It analyses the nature and significance of strong military capabilities in order to be able to protect the natural resources for the benefit of humanity and littoral states. It concludes with the efforts that have been undertaken in order to ensure co-operation and co-ordination of military establishments and the role of extra-regional powers in such initiatives. These initiatives are highlighted through some of the major joint military exercises in the South Atlantic region in which South Africa participated.

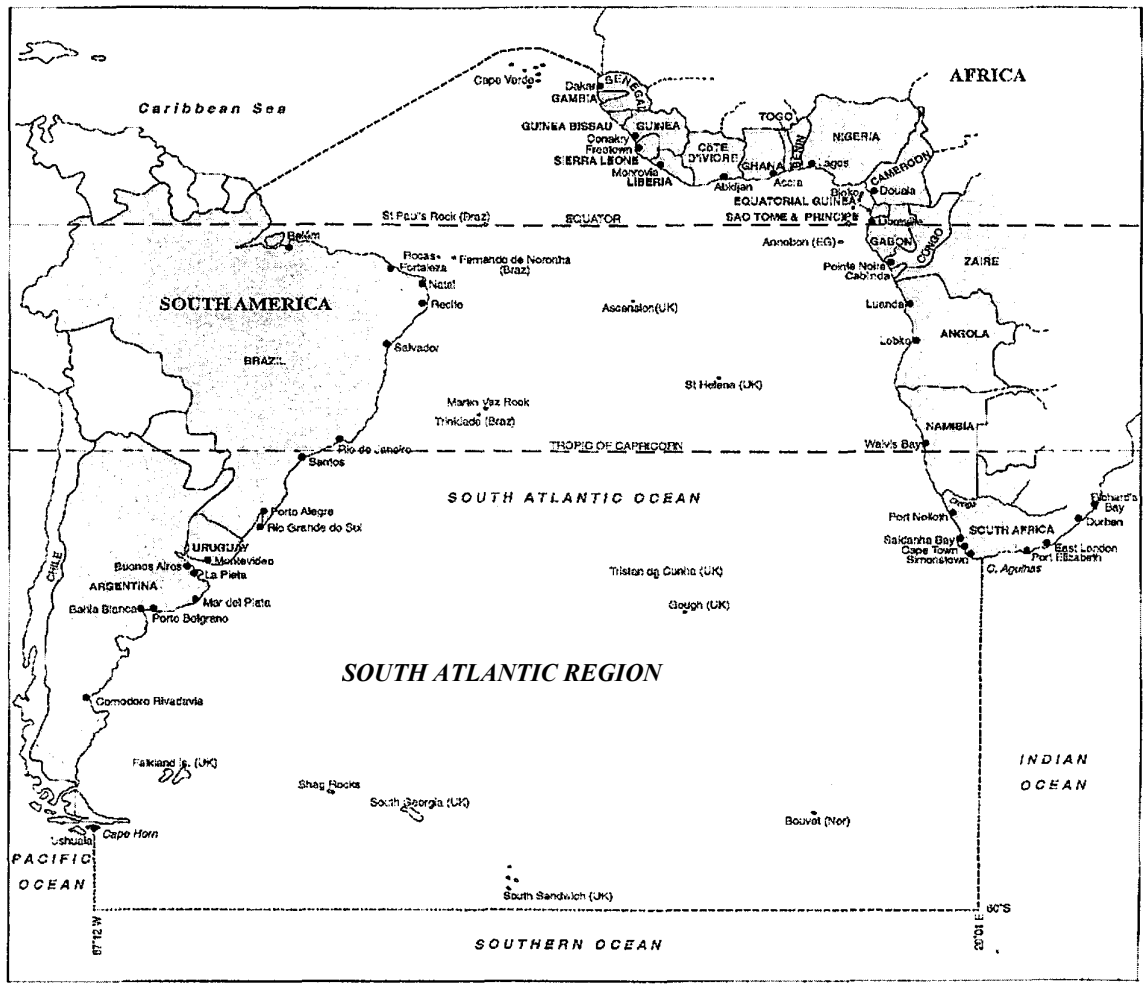
2. DEFINING THE SOUTH ATLANTIC REGION

There is no absolute agreement about the geographic parameters of the so-called South Atlantic region. However, there is a general understanding and consensus that it is that portion of the South Atlantic Ocean which is situated between the latitude somewhat north of the Equator and Antarctica, south of parallel 70^0S, and between the approximate longitudes of 70^0W and 20^0E. Further south, there is the Antarctic Circle, latitude $66^0$33'5"[1] (see Map 2).

The South Atlantic region comprises four main archipelagos and islands of any significant size, that can be viewed as American, Antarctic, African and mid-Atlantic groups. The mid-Atlantic islands are Ascension, Santa Helena, Tristan Da Cunha, Gough and Bouvet. The African island group consists of Fernando Po, Annobon, Príncipe and São Tomé. On the American side there are Fernando de Noronha, Trinidad, Martin Vaz, Falklands/Malvinas, South Georgia and South Sandwich. The so-called Antarctic group, which is located south of the parallel 60^0S, includes the South Orkneys and South Shetlands. It is noteworthy that, geographically-speaking, South Georgia, South Sandwich and Bouvet could also be regarded as sub-Antarctic islands. Tierra del Fuego and Staten Island are not included in these groups simply because they belong to the main South American continental mass.[2]

The main feature of the region is that it has three coastlines, namely, the African, American and Antarctic. The African coastline extends from Guinea-Bissau to the Cape and stretches over 7 800km of which 1 200km cover the deserts of Angola and Namibia. There are sixteen African states sharing the same coastline in the region. The coastline also includes six other

Map 2: GEOGRAPHIC AND GEOPOLITICAL DEMARCATION OF THE SOUTH ATLANTIC OCEAN



Source: *Adapted from* Pinheiro Guimarães, S. (ed.) 1996. ***South Africa and Brazil: Risks and Opportunities in the Turmoil of Globalization***. Rio de Janeiro: International Relations Research Institute, p. 48.

Mediterranean countries. There are relatively few natural harbours with the following being the most important: Freetown in Sierra Leone, Boma in the Congo, Libreville in Gabon, Duala in Cameroon, Luanda in Angola, Walvis Bay in Namibia and Cape Town in South Africa.[3]

The American coastline stretches from Cabo San Roque in the North-East of Brazil to Cape Horn in the Archipelago of Tierra del Fuego. It extends for 9 000km, of which 4 179km belong to Brazil, 330km to Uruguay and 4 500 to Argentina. The American coastline is well-endowed with good natural harbours, particularly in the northern part which includes Brazil and Uruguay. These include Recife, Salvador, Rio de Janeiro, Paranaguá, Santos, Porto Alegre and Río Grande.[4]

The Antarctic coastline extends from the Antarctic Peninsula to the Land of Maud (or Queen Maud) facing Cape Town. This is one of the most inaccessible coastlines in the world, particularly from the Wedell Sea side. Given the fact that the area south of the Southern Ocean and the Antarctic constitute a separate geo-strategic subsystem, the 60^0S latitude is regarded as the southern limit of the South Atlantic region.[5] The South Atlantic region can be accessed from three fronts, namely, from the North Atlantic Ocean, the Indian Ocean and the South Pacific Ocean.[6] It is this inter-connectedness which, among others, necessitated the creation of a security architecture which embraced all the Americas.

3. THE INTER-AMERICAN SECURITY SYSTEM

The immediate post-World War II environment was characterised by the dominance of the 'balance of power' notion of the international political system and the concomitant strategic positioning of military forces. This saw the seeds of the subsequent Cold War blossoming beyond the areas of influence of the arch-rivals, namely, the US and the former Soviet Union. From the Soviet Union's perspective, a strong foothold had already been established in the South Atlantic region. With the creation of the South American Secretariat of the Comintern in 1928, Communist parties were flourishing in the region. Countries such as Chile, Colombia and El Salvador had strong communist parties. However, the Soviet Union realised that there was an increasing threat of renewed attacks from Nazi Germany against it, and that it needed to open negotiations with the US and the UK. In order to be able to deal with Adolf Hitler in a credible manner, all the international resources had to be focused on defence. Consequently, Soviet leader, Joseph Stalin, dissolved the Comintern in 1943, just before the end of WW II in order to re-position the Soviet Union on a sound strategic footing with Roosevelt and Churchill from the US and the UK respectively.[7]

From the US's conceptualisation of her southern neighbours, Latin America was perceived as a single entity with which it had to create a relationship of dependency in virtually all spheres, especially politically, economically and militarily. But the most prominent of these spheres was the military one. Thus, the US proposed during the Inter-American Conference for the Maintenance of Continental Peace and Security, held in Mexico City, that there should be a comprehensive security system for the whole Western Hemisphere. The primary aim of such a system would be to prevent and repel threats and acts of aggression against any of the

countries of the Americas. Consequently, the Inter-American Treaty of Reciprocal Assistance – popularly known as the Rio Treaty – was signed in Rio de Janeiro, Brazil on 2 September 1947 and entered into force on 3 December 1948.[8]

As Table 24 indicates, all the Mercosur countries, including the associate members, were the original signatories of the Rio Treaty. However, the ratification and accession process was done in a chequered manner. With the exception of the US which ratified the treaty only three months after it was opened for signature (12 December 1947), the other Mercosur countries delayed by at least a year. These could be attributed to many factors, including that the US was the driving force behind the conclusion of the treaty in order to thwart Soviet penetration of the region, and that countries such as Argentina and Brazil were still experiencing simmering tensions in the internal political sphere.

Table 24: SIGNATURE AND RATIFICATION OF RIO TREATY BY SELECTED COUNTRIES

Country	Signature	Ratification
Argentina	2 September 1947	19 July 1950
Bolivia	2 September 1947	18 July 1950
Brazil	2 September 1947	5 March 1950
Chile	2 September 1947	28 January 1948
Paraguay	2 September 1947	7 July 1948
United States of America	2 September 1947	12 December 1947
Uruguay	2 September 1947	7 September 1948

Source: United Nations Information Service. United Nations Treaty Series (UNTS). ***www.untreaty.un.org***

The Rio Treaty is essentially a hemispheric-wide mutual defence pact. It was largely based on an asymmetrical relationship between the US and other states. The *causus foederis* (or the hair-trigger clause) of the pact is found in Article 3 which states that "[t]he High Contracting Parties agree that *an armed attack by any State against an American State shall be considered as an attack against all the American States* and, consequently, each one of the said Contracting Parties undertakes to assist in meeting the attack in the exercise of the inherent right of individual or collective self-defense recognized by Article 51 of the Charter of the United Nations."[9] [own emphasis added] It is notable that the Rio Treaty was concluded at the time when the bipolar international system led by the US and the former Soviet Union was

beginning to take shape but had not reached the intensity and sophistication of the late fifties and early sixties.

Through the Rio Treaty the US succeeded in ensuring that the whole of the Western Hemisphere fell under its strategic military umbrella and that any possible penetration (overtly or covertly) by the Soviet Union would be rendered impractical. In line with the asymmetry of the defence pact, the US built in a clause that would enable it to unilaterally take action if there was a perceived or real threat to security of the Western Hemisphere. Article 3(2) of the Treaty states that "[o]n the request of the State or States directly attacked and until the decision of the Organ of Consultation of the Inter-American System each one of the Contracting Parties may determine the immediate measures which it may individually take in fulfilment of the obligation contained in [Article 2] and in accordance with the principle of continental solidarity." Both of these articles became useful during the Cuban crisis of 1962 when the former USSR attempted to position missiles in Cuba. In addition to the UN Charter and other relevant resolutions, the US invoked Article 6 of the Rio Treaty in order to gain support among the American states to thwart Soviet penetration of the Western Hemisphere. Article 6 states that:

> If the inviolability or the integrity of the territory or the sovereignty or political independence of any American State should be affected by an aggression which is not an armed attack or by an extra-continental or intra-continental conflict, or by any other fact or situation might endanger the peace of America, the Organ of Consultation shall meet immediately in order to agree on the measures which must be taken in case of aggression to assist the victim of the aggression or, in any case, the measures which should be taken for the common defense and for the maintenance of peace and security of the Continent.[10]

However, the Rio Treaty remained an essentially military response to a greater strategic challenge posed by the Soviet Union. It was against this background that subsequent to the conclusion of the treaty, the Organisation of American States (OAS) Charter was signed on 30 April 1948 in Bogota, Colombia, which enabled the US to entrench its dominance. The OAS Charter stipulates in Article 2 that its purposes are, amongst others,

- To strengthen the peace and security of the continent;

- to prevent possible causes of difficulties and to ensure the pacific settlement of disputes that may arise among the Member States; and
- to provide common action on the part of those States in the event of aggression.[11]

Thus, the Rio Treaty and the OAS Charter were mutually complementary and therefore became major instruments for engaging other countries across the Atlantic Ocean.

With the demise of the former Soviet Union, there has been a drastic change in the approach and possibly in the nature and intensity, of the commitments of the Rio Treaty. However, there have been a series of confidence-building measures (CBMs) with a view to ensuring hemispheric security. In 1991, the OAS General Assembly adopted a resolution in terms of which a set of CBMs were to be developed.[12] In 1993, the General Assembly adopted another resolution which entrusted the Assembly with the task of convening experts on CBMs.[13] The experts' meeting eventually took place in Buenos Aires, Argentina, in March 1994. The process of ensuring broad regional security in the Western Hemisphere (longitudinal) was concurrently being complemented, if not rivalled, by another one that sought to create hemispheric security in the Southern Hemisphere (latitudinal).

4. SOUTHERN CROSS ALLIANCE

The geographic location of South Africa has always been recognised as strategic from economic and military points of view. Being flanked by the Atlantic and Indian Oceans, and also having powerful maritime nations on both sides such as Argentina and Brazil in the west and Australia in the east, South Africa found it prudent and crucial to highlight the geo-strategic importance of the sea route around the Cape of Good Hope. To this effect, South Africa argued that since the formal boundary of the North Atlantic Treaty Organisation (NATO) was the Tropic of Cancer, there was a strategic vacuum in the South Atlantic and Indian Oceans. There was also a strong perception that the West's maritime traffic would require a well-developed land base from which to operate during crisis situations. In this respect, South Africa could play an important role due to her geo-strategic location. Based on these factors, South Africa, which lies between the 5th and 45th latitudes, shared hemispheric interests and therefore formed a "natural geographic-military-strategic belt" known as the "Southern Cross Belt".[14]

Furthermore, the threat of communist infiltration was also perceived as posing a serious danger to the countries in the Southern Hemisphere. There was a general understanding by the West of the Soviet Union's maritime-strategic designs. These designs were known to include the following: the development of a global maritime capability; the establishment of a maritime presence of a military as well as non-military nature in distant areas; the procurement of supporting base facilities that could be used to deny or undermine Western maritime presence; the diplomatic use of the Soviet Navy in support of Soviet expansionism and the extension of its influence especially in Africa; and lastly, the ability to ensure successful interdiction of Western shipping.[15] From this perspective, the military significance of South Africa's Simonstown Naval Base both as a possible target of the Soviet Navy and its potential use for interdiction of shipping, was highlighted. Given this geo-strategic relevance and being vehemently anti-communist in orientation, South Africa felt it had a valid case for being politically sheltered by the West.

By the mid-1970s, the US-led anti-communist alliance-formation process was almost complete. The US had already signed the Rio Treaty which covered the Western Hemisphere. The US had also signed the ANZUS Treaty, which involved Australia, New Zealand and the US, and the South East Asia Treaty Organisation (SEATO) had also been formed. There was no similar organisation in southern Africa, which, as South Africa argued, left a strategic gap that might be filled by Soviet forces. In most cases, the initiative to establish such regional military groupings was taken by significant regional powers with the help of the US. Similarly therefore, South Africa was justified to call for the creation of a Southern Cross Alliance. The alliance would 'seal' the open flank in the West's defence system. It would be responsible for conducting appropriate political and military operations in order to thwart any possible incursion by the Soviet bloc. According to some analysts, there was already an increasing Soviet presence in the South Atlantic through front organisations (liberation movements) and the OAU, which was also perceived to be opposed to white governments in southern Africa.[16]

The Cape sea route was particularly well-suited for interdicting any maritime traffic that was bound for either East or West. Through the creation of the southern alliance, a credible maritime force, comprising of such powers as Argentina, Australia and Brazil and with appropriate land bases in South Africa, could be grouped together. However, without a

properly co-ordinated link with the West's nuclear capability, the strategy would be bound to fail because its deterrence value would be diminished. Thus, it was important that the US's nuclear shield would have to be extended southwards to cover the Southern Hemisphere as well.[17] However, South Africa's ego-perceptions of the country's maritime-strategic significance did not resonate well with her potential Western partners, thus resulting in measured responses from the West. As the idea of a hemisphere-wide military alliance fizzled out, it became necessary to realign the strategic focus towards the Western front, namely, the South Atlantic region.

5. THE SOUTH ATLANTIC TREATY ORGANISATION

The failure of South Africa to successfully convince the Western nations, especially the US, to support the formation of a latitudinal hemisphere-wide defence organisation, necessitated a re-look at other strategic options. It became apparent to the South African military strategists that a hemispheric defence pact was an over-ambitious enterprise. The best alternative was to concentrate on the South Atlantic region where there was a possibility of tacit and measured support. For the US, such a move would be more viable if it would also include some signatories to the Rio Treaty. It is noteworthy that the idea of forming a South Atlantic defence organisation was not new. When General Castello Branco became the President of Brazil after the military take-over in 1964, he discussed the question of defending the route around the Cape with Prime Minister Salazar of Portugal. Both countries (Brazil and Portugal) were already economically and politically bound by the 1953 Luso-Brazilian Treaty of Friendship and Consultation.[18] However, the idea never enjoyed popular support among the immediate neighbours as it included the involvement of South Africa. Thus, it receded without any concrete action.

The idea of a South Atlantic defence organisation was revived in 1977 when a commander of the Uruguayan Navy proposed that a military pact involving all the countries in the South Atlantic region should be concluded. An organisation to be known as the South Atlantic Treaty Organisation (SATO) would be modelled along the lines of NATO. The proposal purported that the pact would be able to thwart Soviet Union military aggression against any state in the region. It was discussed at length during the eighth meeting of the Foreign Ministers of River Plate basin countries (Argentina, Bolivia, Brazil, Paraguay and Uruguay). Unlike in the mid-1960s, the new government of Brazil, a crucial regional hegemon, was

vehemently opposed to the proposition.[19] The Brazilians believed that the formation of SATO would trigger an arms race in the region and that it could not be formed without co-operation from the Western powers, especially the US. In addition to being bound by the provisions of the Rio Treaty and the OAS Charter, the South American countries would not have sufficient resources to face up to the challenge of confronting the Soviet Union.[20]

Argentina and South Africa usurped the SATO idea and became its principal advocates. Both countries argued that the formation of SATO would also help ensure safe passage and secure trade routes around the Cape of Good Hope. For South Africa, the SATO idea presented an ideal opportunity to obtain allies for South Africa and therefore partial nullification of the country's international *pariah* status. According to the South African ambassador to Argentina at the time, SATO would facilitate "joint defence of Christian and democratic principles" against international communism.[21] While Argentina was in favour of the SATO idea, reservations were expressed about participating in a military alliance that included Chile before the dispute over the Beagle Channel had been resolved.[22] Furthermore, it was increasingly becoming unpalatable and imprudent to be seen by the international community as a South African ally.[23] This was even more so when some of the South American states started democratising.

Argentina, which had always been vacillating in its alliance-formation strategy from being close to the Third World and Western countries, was shocked to be informed that the UK, the US and South Africa were contemplating to establish a military base on the Falklands/Malvinas islands. Argentine Foreign Minister, Nicanor Costa Méndez, expressed concern over the proposal during the meeting of the Co-ordinating Bureau of the Movement, in Havana, Cuba. South Africa vehemently denied the allegations and countered by accusing Argentina of using 'transitory strategic digressions' in her diplomacy.[24] However, the outbreak of the Falklands/Malvinas War (also known as the South Atlantic War) in 1982 interrupted the debate on the formation of a SATO. The accusations against South Africa and the subsequent outbreak of the war over the Falklands/Malvinas islands, negatively affected South Africa's relations with Argentina and Brazil, and also disrupted the momentum of South Africa's thrust to counter international isolation. Ironically, there were allegations, as stated previously, that South Africa gave military support to Argentina during that war. However, it is irrefutably true that South Africa denied the UK permission to use Simon's Town as a halfway station for logistic purposes during the war. At the time of the outbreak of

the South Atlantic War, South Africa was already bound by a ten-year old military pact which also involved Argentina, Brazil, Israel, Paraguay and Taiwan.[25] It is not clear what the impelling reasons for concluding such a pact were, nor is there an indication of the extent of its obligations towards member states. But the immediate post-South Atlantic War period saw South Africa being ostracised or mildly isolated by other pact members. This change in attitude towards South Africa could not be explained by the changes in the internal dynamics of the pact countries, because all of them were still either *pariah* states or under military rule. It is possible that external pressure from potential allies was exerted on the pact countries to downgrade interaction with South Africa.

South Africa therefore decided to exert more pressure on Bolivia, Paraguay and Peru to pursue the idea of SATO, and also to induce them into adopting more South Africa-friendly policies. However, being a member of the Andean Group, Peru was pressurised into severing ties with South Africa. At that stage, that is the early 1980s, South Africa entered into a joint partnership with the UK in constructing a giant irrigation project in Peru. It was this joint project which became a determining factor in Peruvian-South Africa relations. Unlike Peru, Bolivia was a different case as it was of no immediate strategic value to South Africa, except for providing alternative shipping routes and ports in case there were problems with the Peruvian routes. Furthermore, South Africa had very strong relations with Chile, which would also provide alternative port facilities. It was only Paraguay that really had become excessively dependent on South Africa. This followed the signing of four agreements on mutual co-operation with Paraguay, which were maintained, despite the subsequent introduction of democracy in Paraguay.[26]

On a broader scale, some South American countries had global aspirations that contradicted their national realities. One of the dilemmas in this regard was to follow the Third World agenda without alienating themselves from the rich North. Was it to be neutrality or non-alignment as the NAM was proposing? A vexing question, which remained a challenge for the developing countries of the South, was how they could ensure security, *albeit* limited, on a regional basis without aligning themselves with either of the superpowers. Alignment with either the US or Soviet Union had as many advantages for the country or region concerned as it had disadvantages. Nasser, for instance, once argued that "[a]n independent policy based on non-alignment and positive neutralism will make of our countries a great force permitting an independent say."[27] The developing countries believed that non-alignment would not only

"be sufficient to reduce world tension and conflict, and to enhance world peace, cooperation, and stability", but was also "essential in establishing cooperative arrangements among developing nations and reducing the chances for regional animosity."[28] However, geographic proximity to the superpowers often left the neighbouring countries with little or no choice when deciding on alignment.

The SATO idea was a potential solution to the security dilemma of the South Atlantic region but it soon receded as well. It could be argued that while South Africa remained a militarily strong state that would be capable of carrying out trans-oceanic operations in co-operation with other SATO states, the country politically presented a weak link that caused division among potential alliance partners. This observation is largely based on the fact that the SATO idea was deemed logically defensible and therefore it intermittently continued to re-emerge.

Thus, a plethora of factors militated against the realisation of a regional defence organisation (to be known as SATO). These included the following: firstly, the geographic scope of the area and sheer distances separating Southern African and South American sub-regions. Secondly, the superimposition of cultural differences on geographic factors aggravated difficulties associated with social, political and economic exchanges. Thirdly, there were limited maritime capabilities of the South Atlantic littoral states, especially from the African side, with the exception of Nigeria and South Africa, which had relatively superior sea-going naval capabilities. Lastly, there was the reluctance of the littoral states to relinquish or subject self-centred national interests for the benefit of the South Atlantic region.[29] This situation allowed for other strategic avenues to be explored to ensure co-operative trans-Atlantic relations in the Southern Cone.

6. ZONE OF PEACE AND CO-OPERATION IN THE SOUTH ATLANTIC (ZPCSA)

As it increasingly became evident that the SATO idea was not viable and therefore not likely to materialise in its original form, the newly democratising countries on the western South Atlantic region, particularly Brazil, realised that an alternative had to be found. This became even more urgent as the South Atlantic remained vulnerable to numerous security threats - ranging from sea piracy to possible infiltration by the Soviet Union as the latter's fishing conflict with Argentina in 1978 signalled. Furthermore, there was a conscious effort to

remove the East-West conflict from the South Atlantic region by marginalising British military presence in the southern islands. As already indicated, the need for a regional defence organisation was indisputable, but the composition and mechanisms of such an organisation necessitated accommodating South Africa - a proposition that could prove politically expensive to entertain.[30]

6.1 The ZPCSA AS A NEW ALTERNATIVE

The late 1970s and early 1980s were crucial periods for the South Atlantic region. Internal or sub-regional challenges relating to disputed borders (for example, Chile and Argentina); regional hegemonic rivalry (Argentina and Brazil); military rule (most of Latin American and some African countries); and apartheid in South Africa, plagued countries bordering on the South Atlantic. On the African side of the South Atlantic Ocean, South Africa was militarily involved in both South West Africa (now Namibia) and Angola. As already indicated, both superpowers were actively involved in Africa, especially, in Angola. South Africa's foreign policy alignment was inclined towards the West but her internal political situation was a matter of great concern to the UN member states. The UN sought to take strong action against South Africa, and, to this effect, various resolutions were adopted. However, some key countries occasionally abstained from voting for such resolutions. These countries included the UK, the US and France – South Africa's significant trading partners without whose support, no decision could have the desired effect.[31]

On the Latin American side, it was only after the partial resolution of the Chile-Argentina border dispute in the late seventies, and the realisation by Argentina and Brazil (starting with the signing of the Tripartite Agreement – involving the two countries and Paraguay – on 19 October 1979) that rivalry between them was not benefiting either of them, that relatively stable interstate relations were restored on the western shores of the South Atlantic Ocean. According to some analysts, this signalled the beginning of Argentina's reluctant acceptance of Brazil's hegemony in the region.[32]

However, the outbreak of the war over the Falklands/Malvinas islands in 1982 focussed attention on the South Atlantic region. The possibility of escalation involving the two superpowers increased. The aftermath of the South Atlantic War, particularly from the British government's side, demonstrated beyond doubt the strategic importance of the South Atlantic

region to the UK in its dual capacity as a claimant of the Falklands/Malvinas islands[33] and a member of NATO. During the process which De Hoyos calls the "Gilbratization[34] of the [Falklands] islands", and captured in what Margareth Thatcher called "Fortress Falklands", the UK spent over three billion pounds on fortifying the islands and stationing more than 3 800 professional soldiers on them.[35] The strategic value of these islands to NATO was perceived to be securing US and West European access to Antarctica, the Drake Passage and the South Atlantic sea lanes.[36] Some of NATO's, but specifically the US's, large aircraft carriers could find it difficult to pass through the Panama Canal.[37] Also noteworthy, is the fact that the UK maintained (and still maintains) a significant presence in the South Atlantic region through its islands – Ascension, St. Helena, Tristan da Cunha, Gough and South Georgia.

During the mid-1980s, Brazil proposed the formation of the ZPCSA as a countervailing idea to SATO. Being a major regional power in South America, Brazil succeeded in mustering adequate support among the littoral states of the South Atlantic Ocean, excepting for South Africa and Namibia where the former was isolated and the latter still governed by the former. Brazil's erstwhile arch-rivals – Argentina and Chile – supported the proposal. The watershed in trans-Atlantic relations in the Southern Cone came when the UN General Assembly passed Resolution A/RES/41/11 on 27 October 1986 during its 50th plenary meeting.

This resolution declared the Atlantic Ocean, in the region situated between Africa and South America, a zone of peace and co-operation of the South Atlantic. Article 2 of the resolution called upon "all States of the zone of the South Atlantic to promote further regional co-operation, inter alia, for social and economic development, the protection of the environment, the conservation of living resources and the peace and security of the whole region". In Article 3, it further called upon "all States of all other regions, in particular the militarily significant States, scrupulously to respect the region of the South Atlantic as a zone of peace and co-operation, especially through the reduction and eventual elimination of their military presence there, the non-introduction of nuclear weapons or other weapons of mass destruction and the non-extension into the region of rivalries and conflicts that are foreign to it." It is noteworthy that in voting for the resolution, 124 states voted in favour, eight abstained (all from the industrialised countries) and only one – the US – voted against it.[38] This is quite understandable as the establishment of the ZPCSA essentially implied the total 'demilitarisation', and therefore 'denuclearisation', of the South Atlantic region. Lastly, in

Article 5, the resolution reaffirmed that "the elimination of apartheid and the attainment of self-determination and independence by the people of Namibia, as well as the cessation of all acts of aggression and subversion against States in the zone, are essential for peace and security in the South Atlantic region, and urges the implementation of all United Nations resolutions pertaining to colonialism, racism and apartheid."[39]

Thus, Resolution A/RES/41/11 covered four major areas that had far-reaching consequences for the South Atlantic region, namely, socio-economic development; the environment; peace and security; and lastly, emancipation of South Africa and its colonial territories. While these areas are mutually reinforcing and complementary, a brief discussion of the peace and security focus is particularly relevant for this section. In previous chapters it was noted that the modern understanding of security is no longer limited to the military sphere, but incorporates other aspects such as socio-economic development and the environment. However, it is undeniably true that the existence of credible and adequate military capabilities help ensure that other endeavours such as development and environmental conservation succeed.

The successful implementation of these focus areas would require that littoral states and extra-regional powers complied with the provisions of the resolution. Therefore, specific programmes would have to be devised and implemented by the relevant parties, for example restricting military activity in the zone area. To this effect, UN General Assembly Resolution 42/16 of 10 November 1987 urged the international community to assist the region in the implementation of such programmes.[40] Similar calls have been made to the ZPCSA member states since the ZPCSA's first meeting that was held in Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, from 25-29 July 1988; then in Abuja, Nigeria (25-29 June 1990); and lastly in Brasilia, Brazil (21-22 September 1994).[41] Beside the Ministerial meeting of the ZPCSA that was held at the UN Headquarters on 5 October 1993,[42] the fourth ZPCSA meeting held in South Africa, in April 1996, was unique in many ways. Held under the theme "Bridging the South Atlantic", the 1996 ZPCSA meeting not only welcomed South Africa into the South Atlantic littoral states, but also emphasised the strategic importance of the region to both sides of the South Atlantic. Various organisations pledged their support for the ZPCSA activities. For instance, the International Maritime Organisation (IMO) indicated that “it could assist the zone to address the degradation of the marine environment resulting from sea-based activities and enhance their capacity to prevent and mitigate the impact of marine pollution, with particular emphasis

on the implementation of internationally agreed standards for the protection of the marine environment."[43] The United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organisation (UNESCO) stated that with its Intergovernmental Oceanographic Commission, it could contribute to the implementation of UN resolutions, through "the encouragement, promotion and support of regional co-operation among the countries of the region in the study and observations of the South Atlantic."[44] However, it was the question of control of nuclear weapons prevalence on the South Atlantic that was to prove contentious for the extra-regional nuclear powers.

6.2 DENUCLEARISATION

The formation of the ZPCSA and its denuclearisation clause was not the first initiative to rid the whole of South America and the South Atlantic region of weapons of mass destruction. The global impact of the emerging South Atlantic security architecture became conspicuous when, at the height of the Cold War, Brazil proposed in 1961 that the whole of Latin America should become nuclear-free. The consequences of the proposal were going to be far-reaching, not only because of the geographic extent that it would cover but also because it would prove restrictive for the US in its containment strategy against the Soviet Union. The Cuban Missile Crisis in October 1962 revitalised and gave impetus to the Brazilian idea, culminating in the joint declaration by the Presidents of Bolivia, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador and Mexico, which expressed the desire to conclude the treaty declaring South America a nuclear-free zone. The military take-over in Brazil in 1964 proved to be a temporary setback but Mexico took the lead and the Treaty for the Prohibition of Nuclear Weapons in Latin America and the Caribbean was signed in Tlatelolco, Mexico – hence the Treaty of Tlatelolco – on 14 February 1967. When the UN gave its support to the treaty, it entered into force for a very limited number of states on 22 April 1968.[45]

In terms of Articles 1 and 4 of the Treaty of Tlatelolco, the whole of Latin America and its "territorial sea, air space and other space over which the State exercises sovereignty" became the zone within which "the testing, use, manufacture, production or acquisition by any means whatsoever of any nuclear weapons, by the Parties themselves, directly or indirectly, on behalf of anyone else or in any other way" is prohibited.[46] Taking the interests of the US into consideration, the treaty did not prohibit the transport of nuclear weapons in the zone, nor the use of nuclear power in general. With Cuba refusing to sign the treaty, both Argentina and

Chile conditionally signed and ratified it with a proviso that it would only apply to them when all the other relevant states had done so as well. Failing to secure the co-operation of Cuba, the military governments of Argentina and Brazil went ahead with their nuclear weapons programme, thus rendering the whole treaty a dubious achievement.[47]

However, the adoption of Resolution A/RES/41/11 of 27 October 1986 by the UN General Assembly, gave impetus to the notion of total denuclearisation of the South Atlantic region. It also became evident that some form of co-ordination and harmonisation had to be achieved between the ZPCSA and the signatories to the Treaty of Tlatelolco. During the twelfth regular session of the Council of the Agency for the Treaty of Tlatelolco, it was decided that a viable formula would have to be devised in order to establish an appropriate mechanism for co-operation between the two nuclear weapons-free zones.[48] The Treaty of Tlatelolco came into force in 1992 for twenty-four states in the region when Saint Vincent and the Grenadines signed it.[49]

Unlike the Treaty of Tlatelolco, which had two additional Protocols to provide for states falling outside the Western Hemisphere, the ZPCSA relies on Resolutions 49/26 of 22 December 1994 and 49/84 of 11 January 1995 of the UN General Assembly in requesting extra-regional states to comply with the nuclear-free status of the Zone. Protocol I of the Treaty of Tlatelolco, which was later signed and ratified by The Netherlands and the UK but rejected by France and the US, urges the signatories "to undertake to apply the status of denuclearization in respect of warlike purposes as defined in Articles 1, 3, 5 and 13 of the Treaty [of Tlatelolco] in territories for which, *de jure* or *de facto*, they are internationally responsible and which lie within the limits of the geographical zone established in that Treaty."[50] Protocol II obliged the signatories from the nuclear states to respect the non-nuclear status of Latin America and to "undertake not to use or threaten to use nuclear weapons against Contracting Parties" of the Treaty of Tlatelolco.[51] This Protocol was signed by almost all known nuclear powers (People's Republic of China, France, the UK and the US), except the former Soviet Union. However, Russia later signed it after the dissolution of the Soviet Union.[52] Cuba only signed the Treaty of Tlatelolco on 25 March 1995 but has still not ratified it. By 1995, the amended Treaty of Tlatelolco was already fully in force for Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Jamaica, Mexico, Peru, Suriname and Uruguay — the majority of the Mercosur countries.[53]

In Resolution 49/26 of 22 December 1994, the UN General Assembly expressed its satisfaction with the decisions, particularly the Declaration on Denuclearisation, adopted by the ZPCSA member states during their third meeting in Brazil on 21 and 22 September 1994.[54] The subsequent UN resolutions, notably, Resolution 49/84 of 11 January 1995, once again commended the Declaration on Denuclearisation as it contributed to the UN's efforts at "disarmament [and ensuring] effective international control [of] nuclear weapons and other weapons of mass destruction with a view to strengthening international peace and security."[55] Resolution 49/84 further recognises and promotes international co-operation on the peaceful uses of nuclear energy. It concludes by calling upon "all states to co-operate fully for the achievement of the objective to turn the region of the South Atlantic into a nuclear-weapon-free zone." In South Africa, the issue of peaceful use of nuclear energy and the operationalisation of the agreements to that effect on the whole African continent, has pre-occupied officials particularly since 1993 when the Nuclear Energy Act of 1993 and the Weapons of Mass Destruction Act of 1993 were passed.[56]

The declaration of the ZPCSA was a welcome addition to other zones declared free of nuclear weapons. The other nuclear-free zones are the Treaty of South Pacific Zone of Peace (also known as Treaty of Rarotonga, signed on 6 August 1985); the African Nuclear-Weapon-Free Zone Treaty – also known as the Pelindaba Treaty – signed in Cairo, Egypt, on 11 April 1996; and the South East Asian Zone of Peace (Treaty of Bangkok, signed on 15 December 1995). These treaties, together with the Antarctic Treaty (signed on 1 December 1959), collectively contribute towards rendering the Southern Hemisphere and more than 50 per cent of the globe free of nuclear weapons. It is notable that, with the exception of the Pelindaba and Bangkok Treaties, all other zones of peace treaties were negotiated during the height of the Cold War. Thus, the process of ratifying these treaties seems to have been much easier in the post-Cold War era than was the case before.

Furthermore, treaties such as the Limited/Partial Test Ban Treaty (8 August 1963); the Treaty on Non-Proliferation of Nuclear Weapons (1 July 1968); the Seabed Treaty (11 February 1971); and the Comprehensive Nuclear Test Ban Treaty (10 September 1996) contribute to the objectives of both non-proliferation and disarmament of nuclear weapons. Thus, there is an emphasis on non-possession, non-deployment and non-use of nuclear weapons. Most of the ZPCSA countries have signed and ratified most of these treaties. Of all the ZPCSA member states, only Brazil, Argentina and South Africa have ratified the Comprehensive

Nuclear Test Ban Treaty (CTBT) – ratified respectively on 24 July 1998, 4 December 1998 and 30 March 1999, while Cameroon, The Gambia, Nigeria and Sierra Leone had still not yet signed it by the end of 2001. The significance of the ratification of the CTBT stems from the capability of Argentina and Brazil to detect any nuclear explosions. For instance, by 1998, of the 321 monitoring stations and 16 laboratories available world-wide to detect nuclear explosions, Argentina had eight stations, Brazil six and each had one laboratory.[57]

Concerning the Non-Proliferation Treaty (NPT), all the ZPCSA countries have signed it.[58] For many years, Argentina, together with countries such as Pakistan and India, was diametrically opposed to the NPT due to the latter's discriminatory nature. Argentina argued that the NPT entrenched the monopoly of nuclear weapons in favour of the known nuclear states of the North. However, Argentina acceded to the NPT on 10 February 1995.[59] The Limited Test Ban Treaty has not yet been signed by Angola, Congo (Brazzaville), Equatorial Guinea, Guinea, Guinea-Bissau, Namibia, Sao Tomé e Principe and Uruguay. The Seabed Treaty still needs to be signed by Angola, the Democratic Republic of Congo (DRC), Gabon, Namibia and Nigeria.[60] It is also noteworthy that South Africa was the first country in the world "that had fully developed, and then voluntarily dismantled her military nuclear capability."[61] This is reflected as part of South Africa's efforts to rid the continent of indiscriminate and excessively harmful weapons, including landmines.

As much as a need was identified for co-operation and co-ordination between the ZPCSA countries and the signatories of the Treaty of Tlatelolco, similarly, an appropriate mechanism will have to be devised to synchronise the undertakings of the Pelindaba Treaty with those of the ZPCSA. However, one major weakness of the two Treaties (Tlatelolco and Pelindaba), as is the case with other zones of peace, is that they cover land and territorial seas, but do not cover the high seas.[62] This leaves a strategic vacuum which could be exploited by unscrupulous elements such as sea pirates, illicit traffickers of drugs, and nuclear and radioactive materials, who normally have extensive resources to pose a credible challenge to the navies of most littoral states in the South Atlantic region. According to the International Atomic Energy Agency (IAEA) there is a dramatic increase in incidents of illicit trafficking of nuclear and radioactive materials, especially from the territories that constituted the former Soviet Union. The IAEA maintains an extensive database to try and keep track of illicit trafficking in weapons-grade nuclear and radioactive materials. As of 31 March 2001, the

IAEA recorded more than 550 incidents of illicit trafficking in these materials with the peak being between 1993 and 1994.[63]

Given these weaknesses and threats, there have been suggestions that the treaties that declare nuclear-free zones should be consolidated into a single document that declares the whole Southern Hemisphere and adjacent areas to be nuclear-free. However, numerous factors militate against such a prospect.[64] Among these are the lack of total contiguity among the various zones and the complexity of the negotiation process. For instance, from the four nuclear-free zones (Tlatelolco, ZPCSA, Pelindaba, Rarotonga and Bangkok, excluding Antarctica, there are 108 countries plus the five nuclear weapons states, but only less than half, namely 47, are situated in the Southern Hemisphere. The challenge becomes even more acute for South Africa which is a party to most of these regional arrangements, namely the ZPCSA and the Pelindaba Treaty.

6.3 SOUTH AFRICA AND THE ZPCSA

When South Africa and Namibia joined the ZPCSA, with the former subsequently assuming the chair in 1996, the ZPCSA gained momentum in consolidating peace and security in the Atlantic region. The value of the ZPCSA to its member states, in general and to South Africa, in particular, varies significantly. This is largely determined by factors such as the length of the coastline (for instance, the Democratic Republic of Congo – DRC – compared with South Africa); maritime traffic on the immediate coastline; and the dependence on, and the capacity to, optimally utilise marine resources.

From the South African perspective, both economic and strategic considerations justify military involvement in the ZPCSA region. The vulnerability of South Africa's western shores to drug trafficking and small arms proliferation, and also the need to protect fishing resources, the environment, communication sea lanes and trade routes on the Atlantic, remain among the main concerns for the country. The former South African Deputy Minister of Defence, Ronnie Kasrils, once observed that "[t]hose thousands of kilometres of open sea and coastline beckon the gunrunners, the drug smugglers, the international mafia, the terrorists and the pirates of all nationalities, who are fast becoming the greatest security threat of our time."[65] However, it is economic considerations which increase South Africa's justification for military involvement in the region (see Table 25).

The fishing industry alone, which directly employs some 30 000 people, contributes about R2 billion to South Africa's Gross Domestic Product (GDP), and operates about 3 000 vessels out of 13 harbours. Besides, about 85 per cent of South Africa's trade (by value) and 55 per cent of the country's oil imports are conducted by sea.[66] The other ZPCSA member states on the African side of the Atlantic Ocean with significant fish catches, include Benin, Cameroon, the DRC, Côte d'Ivoire, Namibia, Nigeria, Senegal and Sierra Leone.[67]

Table 25: SOUTH AFRICA'S TRADE WITH THE ZPCSA MEMBERS, 1999

SUB-REGION	COUNTRY	IMPORTS (Rm)	EXPORTS (Rm)
ECOWAS	Benin	0.005	84.5
	Cape Verde	0.7	20.9
	Côte d'Ivoire	106.0	239.3
	Gambia	0.6	10.5
	Ghana	25.4	560.4
	Guinea	0.6	62.9
	Guinea-Bissau	0.5	0.8
	Liberia	2.1	11.6
	Nigeria	1 236.1	514.0
	Senegal	3.5	72.9
	Sierra Leone	7.9	15.7
	Togo	63.5	39.7
	SUBTOTAL	***1 446.905***	***1 633.20***
MERCOSUR	Argentina	1 121.4	457.7
	Brazil	1 376.1	947.5
	Uruguay	35.4	51.4
	SUBTOTAL	***2 532.90***	***1 456.60***
SADC	Angola	196.8	1 280.0
	DRC	18.0	807.4
	Namibia	3.8	0.001
	SUBTOTAL	***218.6***	***2 087.401***
UDEAC/CEMAC[68]	Cameroon	18.9	70.0
	Congo	19.0	115.9
	Equatorial Guinea	3.8	86.0
	Gabon	25.0	87.6
	São Tomé e Principe	0.01	6.2
	SUBTOTAL	**66.71**	***365.7***
GRAND TOTAL		***4 265.115***	***5 542.901***

Source: Adapted from *South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA). 2000.* ***The South African Yearbook of International Affairs, 2000/2001****. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs.*

The main destinations for the bulk of South Africa's exports (by value) within the South Atlantic region, are Mercosur and SADC, while ECOWAS and Mercosur have a significant import share from South Africa (Table 25). Even though South Africa enjoys a marginally favourable trade balance in terms of the ZPCSA member states, South Africa's total exports to these states constitute about 12 per cent and 41 per cent of exports to the EU and NAFTA respectively. Thus South Africa's security interests in the South Atlantic also include ensuring safe and unhindered passage to the northern markets. The ZPCSA member states also benefit from the Cape Sea route which remains important for global maritime commercial activities, especially oil transfers – with between 30 and 50 oil tankers sailing around the Cape every month.[69]

6.4 THE NAVAL POTENTIAL OF THE ZPCSA

Brazil and South Africa individually and collectively wield enormous influence both within their respective regions and the ZPCSA as a whole. This was emphasised by Luiz Felipe Lampreia, a former Brazilian Foreign Minister, during his visit to South Africa in 1995. During his interview with the Unisa Centre for Latin American Studies in 1995, Lampreia stated that "dialogue regarding integration, commercial expansion and economic development will revolve around the axis formed by Brazil and South Africa within their respective regions." On the geo-political and strategic significance of the ZPCSA, Lampreia observed that the South Atlantic region must be taken care of, "not only as the maritime passage of a significant part of the world navigation (transportation of oil, important goods, etc.) but also as a zone of particular wealth in terms of maritime resources."[70] Thus, the value of trans-Atlantic co-operation in the Southern Cone had to be viewed across the whole spectrum of security, including economic security.

As Table 26 indicates, there are notable differences between the various sub-regional groups constituting the ZPCSA region in terms of the size of the economy, population and defence expenditures. While the largest number of countries are in the ECOWAS sub-region, followed by UDEAC/CEMAC, then SADC and lastly Mercosur, in terms of economic size and defence expenditure, the reverse order applies – with Mercosur being the largest and ECOWAS the smallest. South Africa's size in terms of GDP and defence budget is more than the combined sizes for ECOWAS, other ZPCSA members from SADC and the UDEAC/CEMAC states. This explains the importance of South Africa within the ZPCSA

with regard to making substantial contributions from the African side of the South Atlantic Ocean.

Table 26: ZPCSA COUNTRIES' GDP, DEFENCE BUDGETS AND POPULATIONS

SUB-REGION	*COUNTRY*	*GDP 1999 (US$Bn)*	*DEFENCE BUDGET, 2000, (US$m)*	*POPULATION, 2001, (million)*
ECOWAS	Benin	2.4	37	6.3
	Cape Verde	0.3	8	0.5
	Côte d'Ivoire	13.1	134	17.1
	The Gambia	0.5	15	1.2
	Ghana	10.1	45	20
	Guinea	3.6	55	7.6
	Guinea-Bissau	0.3	3	1.2
	Liberia	0.5	15	3
	Nigeria	50	340	116
	Senegal	5.2	62	9.7
	Sierra Leone	0.7	9	4.5
	Togo	1.5	31	5
	SUBTOTAL	***88.2***	***754***	***192.1***
MERCOSUR	Argentina	283	3.8	37.3
	Brazil	600	9 900	164
	Uruguay	13.7	227	3.3
	SUBTOTAL	***896.7***	***10 130.8***	***204.6***
SADC	Angola	6.1	542	12.4
	DRC	5.3	400	49
	Namibia	2.7	96	1.9
	South Africa	128	1 900	40.3
	SUBTOTAL	***142.1***	***2 938***	***103.6***
UDEAC/CEMAC*	Cameroon	10.2	155	15.5
	Congo	2.2	73	3.1
	Equatorial Guinea	0.5	11	0.5
	Gabon	6.4	126	1.5
	São Tomé e Principe	N/a	N/a	N/a
	SUBTOTAL	***19.3***	***365***	***20.6***
GRAND TOTAL		***1 146.3***	***14 187.8***	***520.9***

Source: The International Institute for Strategic Studies (IISS). 2000. ***The Military Balance, 2000/2001***. London: Oxford University Press.

'*' – These groupings have the same membership

'N/a' denotes 'data not available'

Due to the large mass of water binding the ZPCSA member states, it is their collective naval capacity that could be utilised effectively to the benefit of the South Atlantic region in terms of their security needs. Navies are generally categorised as follows:[71]

- *Global navies*. These navies, such as the US Navy, have a global reach and can operate simultaneously in different geographic theatres without any substantial loss of combat effectiveness.
- *Ocean-going navies.* Despite their ability to deploy in distant waters, ocean-going navies cannot engage enemy forces simultaneously in different geographic theatres of war without compromising their combat effectiveness. France and the UK are examples of this category.
- *Littoral navies*. Such navies can hardly operate outside their contiguous waters, that is, the Exclusive Economic Zone (EEZ).
- *Coastal navies*. These navies are mainly capable of safeguarding the coastline and cannot challenge any naval threat without the protection of the allies.
- *Constabulary navies*. Such navies are primarily designed to execute constabulary duties.[72]

Generally, factors that determine the size of a navy include the level of economic development, existence of naval threats, and size of defence budget. Arguably none of the ZPCSA navies can be categorised as 'ocean-going', but Brazil and South Africa do possess a littoral naval capability (Table 27). This is particularly important given the expected increase world-wide of populations living within 50km of the sea from 50 to 70 per cent by 2025. With the dramatic increase in populations, it can be envisaged that there will be a corresponding possibility of excessive human activity along the coast, thus increasing the need to patrol such coastlines. It is believed that about 93 per cent of sea-related crimes are committed within 12 nautical miles from the shores.[73] Currently, the patrol capacity of the Zone states is limited and unevenly spread (Table 27).

Table 27: NAVAL PATROL CAPABILITIES (2000) AND MERCANTILE MARINE (1997/8) OF THE ZPCSA MEMBER STATES

	Navy		Mercantile Marine (1998)	
Country	**Personnel**	**Patrol and Coastal Combatant Craft**	**Number of Vessels**	**Gross Tonnage**
Angola	1 500	7	123	73 907
Argentina	17 200	15	501	498 700
Benin	100	1	6	9 00
Brazil	48 600	50	504	417 100
Cameroon	1 300	2	58	12 900
Cape Verde	50	-	38*	16 481*
Congo	800	3	20	3 800
Côte d'Ivoire	900	3	35	9 500
DRC *	900	6	20	12 900
Equatorial Guinea	120	-	2*	3 457*
Gabon	500	2	34*	32 178*
Gambia	70	-	6*	1 490*
Ghana	1 000	4	172*	113 528*
Guinea	400	2	30	11 200
Guinea-Bissau	350	3	23	6 079
Liberia	N/a	N/a-	1 717	60 492
Namibia	100	2	105	54 794
Nigeria	5 000	6	493	451 900
Sao Tomé e Principe	N/a	N/a	N/a	N/a
Senegal	600	10	198	51 000
Sierra Leone	200	3	52	18 792
South Africa	5 190	9	192	383 700
Togo	200	2	6*	1 073*
Uruguay	5 500	10	89*	124 369*
TOTAL	**90 580**	**140**	**4 424**	**2 360 240**

'N/a' denotes *'data not available'*

* denotes *'data available only for 1997 in Jane's Fighting Ships, 1997-1998.'*

Sources: *Adapted from* Maher, J. et al. (eds.) 2001. ***The Europa World Year Book 2001, Vols. 1 & II.*** London: Europa Publications; The International Institute for Strategic Studies (IISS). 2000. ***The Military Balance, 2000/2001***. London: Oxford University Press; Sharpe, R. (ed.) 1997. ***Jane's Fighting Ships, 1997-1998, 100th Edition***. Coulsdon: Jane's Information Group.

As Table 27 indicates, about 80 per cent of the ZPCSA's naval personnel comes from the countries on the western shores of the region (Argentina, Brazil and Uruguay), while about half of the remaining 20 per cent comes from the south-eastern quadrant of the region - coincidentally from the countries which also form part of SADC - Angola, the DRC, Namibia and South Africa. This dual membership, as is the case with the other countries north of the

DRC, provides a cushion for the SADC countries against trans-oceanic criminal activity, especially narco-trafficking.

The African members of the Zone seem to have a superior patrol craft capacity compared to their Latin American counterparts, which only have about 27 per cent of the total. The SADC countries in the Zone region retain only about 20 per cent (see Table 27). While this apparent numerical superiority in patrol craft of the African member states of the Zone is a positive indication that, at least coastal patrols and safety-and-rescue operations could be executed, it is not clear what the level of serviceability of these vessels is (in Nigeria, for instance, only a third of listed vessels were serviceable in 1998).[74] This stems from many factors, including the declining defence budgets both as a global trend and constraints imposed by the two Bretton Woods institutions (the International Monetary Fund – IMF – and World Bank); internal political instability; and a lack of suitable and well-maintained ports that could attract substantial commercial maritime traffic from abroad.[75]

With a 3 000 km-long coastline and an EEZ of about 4,3 million km^2, including the Prince Edward island group, South Africa has the greatest naval responsibility on the whole African continent. South Africa's EEZ is about twice that of India which is 2,2 million km^2.[76] As a general trend world-wide, including the advanced naval powers of the North, the division of national defence budgets in ZPCSA countries does not favour the navies. This can be seen in Table 28, which shows the ratio of defence budget allocation for the navies, air forces and armies in some of the ZPCSA countries[77]

Table 28: RATIO OF BUDGET ALLOCATION FOR THE NAVY, AIR FORCE AND ARMY, 1998

Country	*Ratio*
Argentina	1:1:1,5 (N:AF:A)
Brazil	1,2:1:1,7 (N:AF:A)
South Africa	1:2,3:5,2 (N:AF:A)

N=Navy; AF=Air Force; A=Army

Source: Edmonds, M. and Mills, G. 1998. ***Beyond the Horizon: Defence, Diplomacy and South Africa's Maritime Opportunities***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA), p. 58.

This bias in favour of the armies stems from many factors. These include their non-capital intensive nature (therefore fairly cheap); personnel intensive (thus contributing towards alleviation of unemployment); and their utilitarian value (for instance, law enforcement during internal political instability, peace support operations, peace-building operations, relief operations and so forth). In Africa, no country has allocated more than a third of the national defence budget to the navy.[78]

Also noteworthy in Table 27 is the extent of potential mercantile traffic in the region. The potential 4 424 mercantile vessels with a total tonnage of 2 360 240, which excludes vessels from other regions, shows the importance of securing the trade routes in the Atlantic region. The level of co-ordination of maritime traffic within such a large region is an absolute necessity. Thus, the significance of the framework of the South Atlantic Maritime Area Co-ordination (CAMAS) cannot be overemphasised. Established in 1966, CAMAS comprises Argentina, Brazil, Paraguay and Uruguay (all of which are also members of Mercosur). The main aim of CAMAS is to control merchant shipping through exchange of data on the ships passing through 'designated South Atlantic Maritime Area.'[79] Like the ZPCSA, CAMAS has limited membership but attempts are being made to broaden membership to cover the entire South Atlantic**.** Since it was established during the Cold War era, the objectives and *modus operandi* of CAMAS, to a large extent, still reflect the ideological trappings of the past and might therefore need to be revised, possibly within the framework of the ideals of the ZPCSA.

In the military sphere, the approval in November 1998 of the SANDF's arms acquisition programme by the South African cabinet, could greatly improve the naval capabilities of the ZPCSA countries. In terms of the acquisition programme (Table 29), the SANDF will acquire corvettes, submarines and maritime helicopters, thus enabling the SA Navy to execute its patrol responsibilities in the South Atlantic and also to participate, possibly in future, in ZPCSA-wide naval exercises.

Table 29: SOUTH AFRICAN NATIONAL DEFENCE FORCE'S ARMS ACQUISITION PROGRAMME, 1998

Product	Preferred Supplier	Quantity	Value (Rm)
Corvettes	German Corvette Consortium	4	6 001
Submarines	German Submarine Consortium	3	5 212
Maritime Helicopters	GKN Westland, UK	4	787

Sources: South African Department of Defence's ***Bulletin***, 19 November 1998; and ***Business Day*** (Johannesburg), 19 November 1998.

6.5 A SOUTH ATLANTIC RIM ASSOCIATION

Some observers have argued that the declaratory nature of the ZPCSA is hampering progress in many areas of strategic interest in the region. They further argue that the collective achievements, potential and capabilities of the ZPCSA member states will have to be consolidated. To achieve this, a formal Zone-wide organisation – almost similar to the Association of Southeast Asian Nations (ASEAN) and the EU – should be established. This grouping, to be known as the South Atlantic Rim Association (SARA), would be instrumental in promoting shared values across the South Atlantic.[80] The proponents of the SARA notion are of the view that issues such as security, peace, human rights, poverty and a free market system in the South Atlantic region, will be better addressed and co-ordinated as national policies will be harmonised.

It is not clear whether the proposed SARA will come to fruition, given the diverse nature of the ZPCSA countries. The unequal levels of economic development; vulnerability to different security challenges; and the pace of democratisation within individual countries, could make the SARA notion a remote possibility. However, there are common challenges and values which, when promoted, could result in SARA becoming a reality much sooner. These include improving South-South co-operation; the denuclearisation of the region; the campaign against trans-Atlantic criminal activity (drug trafficking, piracy, illegal fishing); co-ordination of environmental policies (prevention and control of oil leakages from tankers); promoting trade and tourism; and co-ordinating regional capabilities for search-and-rescue operations, as well as providing a firm regional perspective when dealing with the Antarctic issue.

The potential impact of a South Atlantic regional organisation can be deduced from some of the trans-Atlantic joint military exercises that have been held in the region. While these exercises have not been held by virtue of being members of the ZPCSA – because not all participants were members of the ZPCSA and they included extra-regional powers – they have demonstrated without a doubt the absolute necessity for co-ordinated national policies relating to security in the region.

6.6 JOINT MILITARY EXERCISES

The vast ocean separating the countries in the South Atlantic region necessitates that any military exercise should largely involve naval forces. This does not necessarily preclude the possibility of joint land and air forces' operational exercises, especially amphibious landing and bridgehead-formation. However, the most inhibiting factor preventing or limiting the possibility and frequency of joint military exercises, is the fact that countries in that region are mostly developing, with Argentina, Brazil and South Africa classified as middle-income emerging countries. Further complicating matters are limitations imposed by language proficiency.

As already indicated, even though the South Atlantic countries have not yet conducted any joint military exercises by virtue of being part of either Mercosur or ZPCSA, some countries, especially, Argentina, Brazil and South Africa have participated in a few US-sponsored naval exercises, namely the ATLASUR (Atlantic South/South Atlantic), the UNITAS and the TRANSOCEANIC.

6.6.1 *Exercise ATLASUR*

This joint military exercise involves four countries, namely, Argentina, Brazil, South Africa and Uruguay. Its primary aim is to ensure and enhance interoperability of military equipment and harmonisation of military operating procedures during operations. It takes place every two years and participating countries take turns in hosting the exercise. However, it is held alternately every two years off the South American and South African coasts, thus resulting in South Africa having to host it every second turn. While the planning phase of the exercise is conducted long in advance, the actual practical phase of the exercise lasts for two weeks. The exercise depends largely on funding by the US.[81] As Table 30 indicates, South Africa has

taken part in all ATLASUR exercises since 1994, most of which were conducted in South African waters.[82]

Table 30: ATLASUR EXERCISES INVOLVING THE SOUTH AFRICAN NAVY AFTER 1994

Date	Countries Involved	Series	Comments
May/June 1995	Argentina, Brazil, South Africa and Uruguay	III	Exercise held in Brazilian territorial waters.
November 1996	Argentina, Brazil, South Africa and Uruguay.		Preparatory meeting for Ex ATLASUR IV held in South Africa.
April 1997	Argentina, Brazil, South Africa and Uruguay	IV	Exercise held in South African territorial waters
November 2001	Argentina, Brazil, South Africa and Uruguay		Preparatory meeting for Ex ATLASUR V held in South Africa.
April 2002	Argentina, Brazil and Uruguay	V	Exercise held in South African territorial waters.

Source: Information provided by Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001

6.6.2 *Exercise UNITAS*

Unlike ATLASUR, the UNITAS exercise is much bigger in terms of the number of participating countries, duration and the scope of its operation. It involves Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Colombia, Ecuador, Paraguay, Peru, Uruguay, Venezuela and the US, with South Africa participating on invitation from one of the participating countries in that particular country's section of the exercise. For instance, SAS DRAKENSBERG and units of the SANDF participated in Ex UNITAS from North America to South America during 1996.[83] The exercise is designed to provide participating countries the opportunity to conduct combined naval operations in furtherance of mutual defence objectives. It takes place every year in the South Atlantic region. While the exercise takes place during the period from July to December, the actual practical phase lasts between 10 and 14 days.[84]

6.6.3 *Exercise TRANSOCEANIC*

While both ATLASUR and UNITAS are practical exercises involving military ships and military personnel at sea in defensive and offensive roles, TRANSOCEANIC is a naval control shipping exercise. As it is a communication and procedural 'paper' exercise, there are

no naval vessels used at sea. Participating countries are Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador, Peru, South Africa, Uruguay, Venezuela and Panama, with the latter involved for the first time in 2001 as an observer ((Table 31). The primary goal of the exercise is to test and evaluate the procedures for Naval Control and Civil Direction of Maritime Traffic and Fishing, during a period of tension with limited aggression, which increases progressively on the basis of a fictitious scenario. The exercise is held annually and lasts for about 12 days.[85] Given the nature of potential events that may disrupt the smooth flow of maritime traffic on the South Atlantic, Ex TRANSOCEANIC presents an opportunity to optimally explore all options without incurring exorbitant expenses for 'live' exercises.

However, military exercises in the South Atlantic Ocean have not been limited to those sponsored by the US but have also included combined military exercises that are arranged on a bilateral basis. For instance, a Brazilian Task Group consisting of two frigates conducted an operational visit to Cape Town during September 1996. Argentina, Brazil and Uruguay participated in the SA Navy's 75th celebrations during April 1997, while during 1997, a senior officer from Brazil attended Ex MORNING STAR. Similarly South Africa has also had a joint military exercise with Chile. A SA Navy officer joined his counterparts from the US, UK, Australia and New Zealand during Ex BUOY which was held in Chile in April 2000.[86]

Table 31: TRANSOCEANIC EXERCISES INVOLVING THE SOUTH AFRICAN NAVY AFTER 1994

Date	Countries Involved	Series	Comments
August 1995	Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador, Peru, Paraguay, South Africa, Uruguay, USA and Venezuela	X	
August 1996	Argentina, Brazil, Peru, Paraguay, Uruguay, USA and Venezuela	XI	
August 1997	Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador, Peru, Paraguay, South Africa, Uruguay, USA and Venezuela	XII	Participating countries (except Paraguay) held critique conference on the exercise in South Africa in October 1997
August 1998	Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador, Peru, Paraguay, South Africa, Uruguay, USA and Venezuela	XIII	
August 1999	Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador, Peru, Paraguay, South Africa, Uruguay, USA and Venezuela	XIV	Participating countries (except Paraguay) held critique conference on the exercise in South Africa in October 1999
August 2000	Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador,	XV	Participating countries

	Peru, Paraguay, South Africa, Uruguay, USA and Venezuela		(except Paraguay) held critique conference on the exercise in Argentina in October 2000
August 2001	Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador, Panama, Peru, Paraguay, South Africa, Uruguay, USA and Venezuela	XVI	
August 2002	Argentina, Brazil, Chile, Ecuador, Peru, Paraguay, South Africa, Uruguay, USA and Venezuela	XVII	

Source: Information provided by Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

6.7 PROSPECTS AND CHALLENGES OF THE ZPCSA

In addition to the lack of proper co-ordination of activities of common interest across the South Atlantic Ocean, it is evident that there are still numerous challenges in harmonising policies and strategies in the region. One such challenge emanates from the exclusive nature of the ZPCSA. The delineation mechanisms used to determine the membership of ZPCSA were a combination of geographic and ideological factors. In geographic terms, the ZPCSA stretches far beyond what is traditionally regarded as the South Atlantic region.[87] The common concern of the ZPCSA member states to both 'de-ideologise' security by non-alignment in the East-West confrontation and 'denuclearise' by demilitarising the South Atlantic region, not only ensured that countries beyond the region were included, but it also ensured exclusion of known nuclear powers with direct and strategic interests in the region – notably the UK and the US.

Some analysts believe that the narrow exclusive nature of ZPCSA membership, even for the countries with territorial interests in the region, could prove counter-productive. According to Grove[88], any security framework which excludes the UK, despite the latter's claim of sovereignty to the island groups, could render such a framework incomplete – probably similar to the scenario prior to Namibia and South Africa joining the ZPCSA in 1990 and 1994 respectively. In addition, when the UK enforces her EEZ – 200 nautical miles – around the island groups in the Atlantic region, the limitations of exclusivity in the Zone's security framework become even more evident. States can conduct military activities in their respective EEZs.[89] However, it is encouraging to note that France, the People's Republic of

China, the Russian Federation, the UK, and the USA – the known and recognised nuclear states – have also signed the three Protocols of the Pelindaba Treaty.

The recent developments on both sides of the South Atlantic region bring both uncertainty and hope for the future security of the region. On the African side, there are still unresolved or partially unresolved conflicts in for instance the DRC and Liberia. Perhaps the most serious is the multi-national nature of the DRC conflict, which involved most of her neighbours, either in support of the DRC government or the rebels. The 'mild' diplomatic tensions between Namibia and Botswana over a border dispute, do not contribute to regional peace and stability in the South Atlantic. Even though conflicts in the DRC, Liberia and Sierra Leone seem to be partially resolved, scars left by many years of violent internal conflict remain visible. The resumption of hostilities in Guinea-Bissau in violation of the Praia (Cape Verde) cease-fire agreement signed on 26 July 1998, is also cause for great concern to the ZPCSA region. Nigeria's return to civilian rule after many years of successive military governments, however, provides hope that sustainable peace and security in the north-eastern quadrant of the ZPCSA is eventually prevailing.

The western side of the ZPCSA region has also undergone massive change in the political sphere, thus sending mixed signals with regard to the security situation in the region. The political relations between Argentina and the UK have improved considerably over the last few years. This *rapprochement* has seen high profile diplomatic visits taking place between the two countries. For instance, former Argentine President, Carlos Menem, paid a six-day visit to the UK on 27 October 1998, while Prince Charles reciprocated the visit by spending three days in March 1999 on the disputed islands (Falklands/Malvinas). In the aftermath of Menem's visit, the UK announced a partial lifting of the 16-year arms embargo imposed on Argentina after the Falklands War. This would be done with a proviso that "[l]icences will only be granted for exports that we are satisfied would not, now or in the foreseeable future, put at risk the security of our Overseas Territories in the South Atlantic or our forces operating there."[90] Therefore, the military-political situation regarding the Falklands/Malvinas islands has not yet been resolved. Even though the British naval defence around the island group has been scaled down with the departure of the destroyer HMS Sutherland – the last ship of the many frigates and destroyers stationed there since 1982 – this does not signal the end of British military involvement in the region. The recently established South Atlantic Patrol Task Group of the Royal Navy – comprising the HMS Marlborough and

tanker RFA Gold Rover – will still be responsible for the disputed islands as part of its patrols off West Africa.[91]

The security aspect of the ZPCSA with regard to the Falklands/Malvinas and its ramifications involving the UK, has always been one of the major challenges facing the ZPCSA member states. During the ZPCSA meeting held in Buenos Aires, Argentina, on 21 and 22 October 1998, South Africa handed over the chair of the ZPCSA to Argentina. At this meeting the ZPCSA members recommitted themselves to exchange of comprehensive information about each ZPCSA country; sharing information on registration of fishing vessels; promoting trade; combating drug trafficking; and considering joint initiatives against illicit manufacturing and trafficking in small arms and related materials.[92]

7. CONCLUSION

The security architecture of the South Atlantic region is characterised by a number of security instruments that overlap largely more by accident than by design. It is also characterised by massive inequality of littoral states in terms of economic development, military capabilities, and vulnerability to security threats such as narco-trafficking and sea piracy. The various instruments and models that have been used to provide blanket security for the South Atlantic littoral states have had limited success due to the disjointed nature of such instruments and apparently insufficient political will of the main role-players. These instruments were initially designed to deal with Cold War threats as determined by the US and the former Soviet Union. With the demise of the Cold War, little has been done to realign these instruments with the post-Cold War exigencies. For instance, while the Rio Treaty still remains in place, there is no doubt that the US's commitment to the treaty's provisions is somewhat weakened and only invoked during times of dire need such as dealing with international terrorism following the events of 11 September 2001 in the US.

South Africa's efforts to become linked to the security umbrella of the Western Hemisphere, firstly through the formation of the Southern Cross Alliance and later the South Atlantic Treaty Organisation, along the lines of NATO, were well-intentioned but failed because of the potential partners' refusal. At no stage was the validity or the necessity of such security alliances ever denied by any party, but South Africa's potential participation remained a contentious point and represented a weak link. Thus, the advent of democracy in South

Africa in 1994 and its subsequent membership of the ZPCSA, was a major step in the direction of creating a strong organisation (SARA notion) that covers the whole of the South Atlantic region. However, one of the challenges is that the original threat, namely, the potential infiltration of the South Atlantic states by communism, has disappeared. The formation of such an organisation would be dealing with 'new generation' threats that are not necessarily military in nature but require a strong military presence or support. Some of the pressing issues facing the South Atlantic region include combating trans-oceanic criminal activity; protecting the environment and marine resources; and the promotion of commercial activity for mutual benefit.

In the military sphere, it is evident that the collective patrol capacity of the region still requires attention. Some of the ZPCSA countries have advanced shipbuilding and ship-repair capacity which, if properly co-ordinated, could help ensure that most of the ZPCSA vessels are sea-worthy. To this effect, personnel exchange programmes, which focus on both transfer of technical skills and the sharing of resources, will have to be introduced in the South Atlantic region. Some of these issues could perhaps be facilitated by the formal institutionalisation of the ZPCSA through the establishment of the South Atlantic Rim Association.

Joint exercises involving all or most of the ZPCSA naval forces with a view to improving interoperability remain crucial. As was discussed in this chapter, there are a limited number of joint military exercises which are not undertaken on the basis of membership of the ZPCSA but largely on the basis of mutual understanding and sharing common oceanic boundaries. These exercises have taken place primarily because of US funding, thus posing a dilemma for the littoral states if the US were hypothetically to ask, for instance, for permission to transport nuclear waste or conduct military manoeuvres in the South Atlantic waters. While this does not seem to pose an immediate threat to the continued existence of, and adherence to, the denuclearisation clauses of the Tlatelolco and ZPCSA arrangements, there is little doubt that the ZPCSA countries might be expected by the US to protect its interests in the region and possibly support positions in international forums.

REFERENCES AND NOTES

[1] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. 1989. ***Strategy in the Southern Oceans: A South American View***. London: Pinter Publishers, p. 71.

[2] Venter, D. "South Africa, Brazil and South Atlantic Security: Towards a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic", in Pinheiro Guimarães, S. (ed.) 1996. ***South Africa and Brazil: Risks and Opportunities in the Turmoil of Globalization***. Rio de Janeiro: International Relations Research Institute, p. 48. See also Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* p. 71.

[3] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit*, p. 72

[4] *Ibid*. pp. 71-72.

[5] Du Plessis, A. 1987. "South Africa and the South Atlantic Ocean: A Maritime-strategic Analysis". Institute for Strategic Studies University of Pretoria (ISSUP) Occasional Paper, Pretoria, Number 24, p. 12.

[6] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* p. 72**.**

[7] Varas, A. "Soviet Union- Latin American Relations: A Historical Perspective", in Muñoz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996. ***Latin American Nations in World Politics***, Second Edition. Boulder: Westview Press, pp. 238-239.

[8] Calvert, P. 1994. ***International Politics of Latin America***. Manchester: Manchester University Press p. 157.

[9] ***Inter-American Treaty of Reciprocal Assistance*** signed in Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, on 2 September 1947.

[10] *Ibid*.

[11] ***Charter of the Organization of American States*** signed in Bogotá, Colombia, 30 April 1948, and as amended by the following protocols: "***Protocol of Buenos Aires***" signed on 27 February 1967; "***Protocol of Cartagena de Indias***" signed on 5 December 1985; "***Protocol of Washington***" signed on 14 December 1992, and "***Protocol of Managua***" signed on 10 June 1993.

[12] Organisation of American States General Assembly. Resolution 1123 (XXI-O/91) of 1991.

[13] Organisation of American States General Assembly. Resolution 1237 (XXIII-O/93) of 1993.

[14] Leysens, A. 1992. ***South Africa's Relations with Latin America (1966-1988***). Unisa Centre for Latin America Studies Occasional Paper, Pretoria, No. 6, pp. 30-31.

[15] Du Plessis, A. 1989. *op cit.* p. 36

[16] Leysens, A. 1992. *op cit*. p. 31.

[17] *Ibid*. p. 33.

[18] *Ibid.* p. 34.

[19] Broekman, D.A. 1998. "A South Atlantic Rim Association: From a Notion to a Reality?" ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 14, No. 1, p. 7. See also Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1997. "Brazil and South Africa: An Evolving Relationship between Regional Powers." ***Politeia***, Vol. 16, No. 2, p. 24, and Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* p. 60.

[20] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* pp. 60-61.

[21] Anglaril, N.B. 1995. "Argentina's Relations with Africa: The Myths and Realities of Co-operation Between the Countries on the Southern Hemisphere." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 11, No. 1, January - June, p. 9.

[22] *Ibid.*

[23] Child, J. "South American Geopolitics and Antarctica: Confrontation or Cooperation?", in Kelly, P. and Child, J. (eds.). 1988. ***Geopolitics of the Southern Cone and Antarctica***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers, *op cit*. p. 199.

[24] Anglaril, N.B. *op cit.* p. 10.

[25] Leysens, A. 1992. *op cit.* p. 37.

[26] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* pp. 60-61.

[27] Al-Mashat, A.M.M. 1985. ***National Security in the Third World***. London: Westview Press, p. 9.

[28] *Ibid.* p. 10.

[29] Du Plessis, A. 1987. *op cit*. pp. 46-47.

[30] Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* p. 140.

[31] Whittaker, D.J. 1995. ***United Nations in Action***. London: UCL Press, pp.165-166.

[32] Russell, R. "Argentina: Ten Years of Foreign Policy", in Kelly, P. and Child, J. (eds.) *op cit*. p. 73.

[33] The Malvinas/Falklands islands, which have a total population of about 2100, consists of more than 200 islands. These islands cover an area of over 12 000 square kilometres. See Marcopress News Agency. ***Falklands-Malvinas News***, 9 March 1999.

[34] "Gilbratization", according to De Hoyos, "is the action by which something becomes 'Gilbratar-like'". Thus the "Gilbratization of the islands" referred to the "process by which the islands are supposed to become the inexpungable key to the security system and its symbol …" See De Hoyos, R. "Malvinas/Falklands, 1982-1988: The New Gilbratar in the South Atlantic?", in Kelly, P. and Child, J. (eds.) 1988. *op cit.* pp. 239-244.

[35] De Hoyos, R. *op cit.* pp. 242-244.

[36] Child, J. *op cit*. p. 191.

[37] Grove, E. "Naval Co-operation in the South Atlantic", in Mills, G. (ed.) 1995. ***Maritime Policy for Developing Nations***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA), p. 226.

[38] United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic". A/RES/41/11 of 27 October 1986.

[39] *Ibid*.

[40] ***United Nations General Assembly Resolution*** taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic". A/RES/42/16 of 10 November 1987.

[41] ***United Nations General Assembly Resolution*** taken during Plenary meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic". A/RES/43/23 of 14 November 1988. See also ***United Nations General Assembly Resolution*** taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic". A/RES/45/36.

[42] ***United Nations General Assembly Resolution*** taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic". A/RES/48/23 of 24 November 1993.

[43] ***UN General Assembly Press Release***, GA/9165 of 14 November 1996.

[44] *Ibid.*

[45] ***Treaty for the Prohibition of Nuclear Weapons in Latin America (Tlatelolco Treaty),*** signed in Tlatelolco, Mexico, on 14 February 1967. See also Calvert, P. *op cit.* pp. 208-209.

[46] ***Tlatelolco Treaty***, *op cit.* See also Calvert, P. *op cit.* p. 209.

[47] Calvert, P. *op cit.* p. 209.

[48] ***United Nations General Assembly Resolution*** taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic". A/RES/46/19 of 25 November 1991 and A/RES/51/52 of 10 December 1996.

[49] ***United Nations General Assembly Resolution*** taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic". A/RES/47/61 of 9 December 1992.

[50] Article 1 of ***Protocol I to the Treaty for the Prohibition of Nuclear Weapons in Latin America and the Caribbean (Treaty of Tlatelolco)***. See also Calvert, P. *op cit.* p. 209.

[51] Article 3 of Protocol II to the ***Treaty for the Prohibition of Nuclear Weapons in Latin America and the Caribbean (Treaty of Tlatelolco).***

[52] Calvert, P. *op cit.* p. 209.

[53] ***United Nations General Assembly Resolution*** taken during 90th Plenary Meeting on "Consolidation of the Regime of Established by the Treaty for the Prohibition of Nuclear Weapons in Latin America and the Caribbean (Treaty of Tlatelolco)". A/RES/50/77 of 12 December 1995. See also Ferm, R. and Berggren, C. "Arms Control and Disarmament Agreements", in SIPRI. 2001. ***SIPRI Yearbook 2001: Armaments, Disarmament and International Security***. Oxford: Oxford University Press, p. 652.

[54] ***United Nations General Assembly Resolution*** 49/26 of 22 December 1994.

[55] ***United Nations General Assembly Resolutions*** 49/84 of 11 January 1995 and 50/18 of 7 December 1995, 25 November 1996. See also the ***UN Secretary General's Report*** on the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic, 24 October 1995.

[56] Minutes of a Meeting in Preparation of the 4th Meeting of the Zone of Peace and Co-operation of the South Atlantic, held in Pretoria, on 15 November 1995.

[57] Capdevila, G. 1998. "Disarmament: Treaty Targets Argentina, Brazil and Chile." ***Inter Press Service***, 4 May.

[58] Ferm, R. and Berggren, C. *op cit.* p. 654.

[59] Carasales, J.C. 1996. "A Surprising About-Face: Argentina and the NPT". ***Security Dialogue***, Vol. 27, No. 3, pp. 328, 334.

[60] Ferm, R. and Berggren, C. *op cit*, p. 654.

[61] Robinson, T. and Boutwell, J. 1996. "South Africa's Arms Industry: A New Era of Democratic Accountability?" ***Armed Forces & Society***, Vol. 22, No. 4, Summer, pp. 601-602.

[62] Minutes of the Meeting of the Member States of the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic held on 15 August 1995, Pretoria.

[63] Zarimpas, N. "The Illicit Traffic in Nuclear and Radioactive Materials", in SIPRI. *op cit.* p. 505.

[64] Minutes of the Meeting of the Member States of the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic held on 15 August 1995, Pretoria.

[65] Du Plessis, L. "The Challenge of Effective Sub-Saharan Maritime Defence", in Du Plessis, L. and Hough, M. (eds.) 1998. ***Protecting Sub-Saharan Africa: The Military Challenge***. Pretoria: Human Sciences Research Council, p. 157.

[66] Edmonds, M. and Mills, G. 1998. ***Beyond the Horizon: Defence, Diplomacy and South Africa's Maritime Opportunities***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA), p. 68. See also Du Plessis, L. *op cit.* p. 156.

[67] Du Plessis, L. *op cit.* pp. 156-157, and Edmonds, M. and Mills, G. *op cit.* p. 68.

[68] The UDEAC and CEMAC have similar membership. CEMAC has taken over all activities of UDEAC. Information provided by Africa Institute of South Africa on 17 March 1999. See also Esterhuysen, P. (ed.) 1998. ***Africa A-Z: Continental & Country Profiles***. Pretoria: Africa Institute of South Africa, p. 65

[69] Du Plessis, L. *op cit.* p. 152.

[70] Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1995. "Brazil's New Role in South and Southern Africa: An Interview with Luiz Felipe Lampreia." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 11, No. 2, July-December, p. 52.

[71] *Ibid*. p. 147.

[72] *Ibid.* pp. 147-149.

[73] Edmonds, M. and Mills, G. *op cit.* pp. 46, 68.

[74] Du Plessis, L. *op cit.* p. 159.

[75] Edmonds, M. and Mills, G. *op cit.* pp. 64, 75.

[76] Edmonds, M. and Mills, G. *op cit*. pp. 62, 71.

[77] *Ibid*. p. 58.

[78] Du Plessis, L. *op cit*. p. 161.

[79] Grove, E. *op cit.* p. 227.

[80] Broekman, D.O. *op cit.* p. 4.

[81] Information provided by the Department of Defence, Navy Headquarters, Pretoria, 12 November 2001.

[82] Information provided by Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[83] *Ibid.*

[84] Information provided by the Department of Defence, Navy Headquarters, Pretoria, 12 November 2001. See also Khanyile, M.B. 1998. "Brazil-South Africa Relations: The Military Dimension". ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 14, No. 2, p. 33.

[85] Information provided by the Department of Defence, Navy Headquarters, Pretoria, 12 November 2001.

[86] Information provided by Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.

[87] Sardenberg, R.M. 1998. "Windows of Opportunity: Consolidating the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 14, No. 2, p. 54. See also Broekman, D.O. *op cit.* p. 5.

[88] Grove, E. *op cit.* p. 224.

[89] Du Plessis, L. *op cit.* p. 155. See also Gamba-Stonehouse, V. *op cit.* p. 93.

[90] ***New York Times*** *(New York)*, 18 December 1998.

[91] Marcopress News Agency. "Naval Defence Scaled Down". ***Falklands / Malvinas News***, 21 March 1999. www.macropress.com

[92] ***"Plan of Action" Declaration*** concluded at the end of the Zone meeting in Buenos Aires, Argentina, on 21 and 22 October 1998. Information provided by the South African Department of Foreign Affairs.

CHAPTER SIX

EVALUATION

An analysis of the security relations between South Africa and the Mercosur countries is complicated by a number of factors. Firstly, Mercosur is a recent creation and South Africa a new democracy. However, the interaction between the individual member states of Mercosur and South Africa has existed for many years. The status of current relations is largely influenced by their previous interaction at bilateral level.

Secondly, and flowing from the previous point, the current relations are based on the post-Cold War global environment, which is characterised by reduced inter-state war or, at least, asymmetrical warfare (i.e. powerful states vs. weak states, or state vs. non-state actors); adoption of the principle of democratic governance; and subordination of military security to human security through socio-economic development. In such an environment, the rationale and motive for forming alliances are totally different from those of the Cold War era.

1. SUMMARY

There is general consensus that states continually seek to strengthen their power through alliances and partnerships in the social, economic, military, technological or political spheres. However, with the expansion of the concept of security, the nature and scope of such alliances and partnerships have become elastic and differences between the various forms of security blurred. The emergence of concepts such as co-operative security, collective security, collective defence (also known as mutual defence), common security and human security, has added to the confusion for both analysts who have to interpret the concepts and the policy-makers who have to provide policy guidelines in respect of various forms of security.

1.1 SECURITY: A CONCEPTUAL FRAMEWORK

a. The eternal quest by states to pursue strategies that help maximise their power and security has a direct influence on the way in which state-building and alliance-formation processes are viewed. The traditionalist and, to a more limited extent, modern view of the

state-building process, portrays states as predatory political entities which normally thrive on the weaknesses of their neighbours. However, that perception is increasingly receding owing to a host of factors, which include the emergence of a new understanding of security. For instance, the economic strength of a country is linked to the economic strength, or lack thereof, of its neighbour. Poor neighbours are a main source of instability through refugee problems, trans-border criminal activities and support for rebel or insurgent groups. Thus, the modern view of security is predicated on co-operative security, which implies a multilateral approach to security.

b. There has also been a gradual expansion of the concept of security. The modern notion of security, with its multitude of new threats, presupposes that the state has limitless resources. As resource requirements normally far outstrip available resources, such an analysis implies that the quest for total security is a futile exercise as it is unachievable. Thus, instead of rejecting the expanded notion of security on the grounds that it makes security efforts unattainable, a sense of realism has to be injected in the debate. This can be done by acknowledging that real security threats are those that are urgent, critical and have the potential of causing cataclysmic damage to the state and/or citizens, if they are not attended to. Hence, it is these types of threats that warrant urgent use of the available national resources.

c. Unlike in the previous two centuries where co-operative relationships between states were more informal and short-term, there has since the latter half of the twentieth century been a significant change in the international system where inter-state interaction is based on some form of formal and long-term strategic arrangement in such spheres as trade, politics, military or technology. The central idea is the sense of mutual interest in survival under all conditions, including during war, natural disasters and economic hardships. Consequently, numerous variations or concepts of inter-state co-operative mechanisms and structures have emanated from this situation. These include collective security, collective defence, the concert security notion, human security, common security, and comprehensive security. These variations are described on national, regional, international and global scales. For each, or for combinations of these variations, there are numerous structures or bodies that are supposed to deal with the specific form of security at a particular geographic scale, that is, nationally, regionally or globally. With the globalisation phenomenon, it is increasingly becoming almost impossible to maintain mutually-exclusive agreements because membership

of these structures tend to overlap. There is therefore a potential danger of an unfettered proliferation of security-related national and international structures, dealing with issues that are so closely related that they should not be separated. This is particularly true in the area of nuclear non-proliferation issues.

d. Given the complexity of especially depicting the inter-relationships of security variations and the dichotomy in the international system of the rich Global North and the poor Global South, it can be surmised that the 'Security Pyramid' succeeds partially in providing a broad picture of these inter-relationships. The point of departure is that there are different perceptions of security prioritisation between the developed and developing countries. There is an incremental graduation in terms of ambitions and geographical scope of involvement in security co-operation. This incremental approach is based on the level of economic development and maturity of the national political system. Put differently, as states develop economically and become mature politically, their security priorities shift to the higher level. For instance, most developed states have concerns about global security while most developing states are still grappling with internal issues such as ethnic/racial or religious fractions, separatism, unstable political systems, lack of national consensus and extreme poverty.

1.2 HISTORICAL DEVELOPMENT AND STRUCTURE OF MERCOSUR

a. The formation of Mercosur and the subsequent attempts by South Africa to cement ties with individual member states of the group, bears testimony to the states' eternal quest for security, primarily in the socio-economic sphere. When Mercosur was formed, it coincided with a few significant epoch-making events in the international political system. Firstly, the Cold War era was coming to an end; secondly, in Southern Africa, the sub-regional organisation known as the SADCC was being transformed into the SADC, and lastly, South Africa was in the process of democratising. This had a tremendous influence on the nature of engagement between the post-1994 South Africa and the latter's strategic partners, which included members of Mercosur. Since security was no longer defined strictly in military terms, economic interaction and high-profile business visits took place, culminating in mutual visits by heads of states across the Atlantic Ocean.

b. The South American countries, including those that later formed Mercosur, were plagued by military intervention in politics to the extent that they believed that no civilian

government could rule the country without a significant military involvement. One of the instruments they used was the so-called 'military developmentalism', which is a doctrine that the military should stay in power for as long as it requires to place the economy on the right footing. During the reign of the military in countries like Argentina and Brazil, the economy was performing even better than when the civilian authority was in power. Even though this was done at the expense of human rights and other civil liberties such as freedom of expression, freedom of assembly and demonstration, and the right to strike, the good performance of the economy gave credence to the perception that the military were better rulers. And given the recurrence of military *coups d'tat* in the Southern Cone countries, it is possible that this popular perception became inculcated into the minds of the junior military officers and it therefore became one of their long-term goals to become military politicians. Furthermore, this demonstrated without doubt that when it amounts to 'bread and butter' issues, the enjoyment of popular civil liberties could become a political luxury which ordinary people are prepared to forfeit or relegate to lower priority.

c. The formation of Mercosur was actually a culmination of a long process of alliance formation on a regional basis. The post-WW II period was characterised by the extension or extrapolation of alliances that had existed during the war. This resulted in the mushrooming of regional organisations, some of which had incompatible goals and therefore later disbanded or re-aligned. Given the bipolarity of the international system at the time of the Cold War, it is not clear if these organisations would have been formed at all or if they were not part of the grand strategy of the superpowers to carve the world into distinct regional groupings, which would be easier to influence or deal with. The predecessors of Mercosur were established on the basis of an all-inclusive approach which seemed to disregard some of the dynamics brought about by such factors as contiguity or geographic proximity, compatibility of political systems, and level of economic development. Unlike its predecessors, Mercosur was limited to four countries but a 'window' for possible future expansion was left open. Thus, judging by the increase in volume of trade within members of Mercosur and comparing it with such sub-regional organisations such as the Andean Community and SADC, it can be concluded that Mercosur is the best performing sub-regional economic organisation in the Southern Hemisphere. Therefore, any interaction (in the political, economic or military spheres) between South Africa or SADC and Mercosur is bound to generate benefits for the Southern African sub-region generally and South Africa in particular.

d. The dominant economic policies of the immediate post-WW II era in South America were aurtakic and based on self-sufficiency. Imbued with the spirit of nationalism, as most military governments seem to over-emphasise nationalist symbols and ideals, the regional organisations that were created became weak due to nationalist fissures that became too prominent to ignore. Thus, with the formation of Mercosur, the member states decided on an 'open regionalist' formula that was still at an embryonic stage in the Far East. The Mercosur countries took a calculated risk in opening up their economies, despite the potential danger of being overwhelmed by East Asian and European products. Furthermore, the traditional rivalries among the member states that had existed for many years had not yet been totally obliterated. However, despite the glaring risks, the Mercosur countries were already at a fairly advanced level of development. In addition, they also had a significant regional partner, Brazil, whose sheer weight (in military, economic and political terms) in the international system was significant enough to partially shield them. It is highly unlikely that extremely poor regions like Africa would have been able to pursue the concept of 'open regionalism' without any negative impact on a massive scale. However, the question could be asked as to how open is Mercosur's so-called open regionalist approach really? This question stems from the realisation that while Mercosur is open in respect of external trade, it also has limited membership and a common tariff structure, similar to the EU, which is regarded as a typical 'closed regional economy'.

e. Mercosur as a regional economic organisation has achieved remarkable success in its attempts to integrate its regional economies. Some of the contributory factors to this success include the following:

- Small size as a result of limited membership. Its predecessors failed because membership was automatic and based on geographic proximity. Like the EU, membership of Mercosur is not automatic and certain criteria have to be complied with before such membership can be granted. Hence, Bolivia and Chile still remain associate members, pending full compliance with the criteria.

- Gradual and incremental approach. Mercosur resolved to remain small in size without precluding the possibility of future expansion. This has enabled it to establish a sound foundation and to define not only 'household' rules and internal

controls, but also the mechanisms to engage external role-players and potential members from the regional neighbourhood. It is also notable that even in the area of common external tariffs, a gradual approach has been adopted, thus allowing countries like Chile to adjust their tariff structure in accordance with Mercosur's schedules.

- Sensitivity to unequal levels of economic development. Given the unequal levels of development among member states, Mercosur designed a graded mechanism that accommodates other states on the basis of their economic strength. For instance, the use of a chequered tariff system and the strict application of rules of origin in trade, are a case in point.

- Democratic imperative. With all the Mercosur members having experienced numerous military *coups d'tat*, it was only evident that the requirement that member states should demonstrate adherence to liberal democratic principles, would become a pre-requisite for membership.

e. The cessation of hostilities between the regional rivals, Argentina and Brazil, was actually the determining factor in ensuring the success of the integration process of Mercosur. Even though Brazil has tremendous influence within Mercosur due to her economic, political and military dominance in the sub-region, there are sensitivities related to possible reversion to political tensions with Argentina and that alone substantially helps keep the whole organisation in check. Each member state, especially Argentina and Brazil, is very cautious in taking courses of action that would militate against the founding treaty among members, or even compromise the working relationship between Argentina and Brazil.

1.3 SOCIO-ECONOMIC CO-OPERATION AND SECURITY

a. South Africa's interaction with the Mercosur countries has always been based largely on socio-economic co-operation. During the period prior to 1994, South Africa used such co-operation with the aim of gaining some semblance of acceptability by the international community despite the unacceptable internal political system. The urgency of cementing ties with Latin American states, especially those that later formed Mercosur, was prompted by an intensified campaign by the liberation movements (particularly the ANC and the PAC); the

anti-apartheid movement around the world; and the imposition of an arms embargo by the United Nations on South Africa. Seeking allies in South America was logical and politically prudent as very few states in Europe, North America and the Far East were prepared to deal with South Africa, even surreptitiously. This was also prudent because most states in South America were under military rule. However some of these countries attempted to shun South Africa despite being in a similar situation of being ostracised by the international community.

b. The advent of democracy in South Africa in 1994 opened the doors of opportunity for the South African people and government. Furthermore, it enabled littoral states on both sides of the Indian and Atlantic Oceans to design a complete security architecture that included South Africa and the newly-independent Namibia. On a global level, it enabled South Africa not only to play a significant role in international affairs, but also to advance the notion of South-South co-operation in all spheres of human endeavour. In this respect, Mercosur countries were among the very first to be visited by the first democratically elected president of South Africa – Nelson Mandela. His successor, Thabo Mbeki, also followed suit. Brazil and Argentina have always played relatively prominent roles within the NAM. When South Africa assumed the chair of NAM, her ties with the two countries were cemented quite significantly.

c. The democratisation of countries on both sides of the South Atlantic Ocean almost coincided with the demise of the Cold War, and the end of a bipolar world. Thus when South Africa became democratic, the nature of issues that dominated the post-Cold War environment were such that there was a fundamental shift away from military interaction to socio-economic development. The only issues of security concern between South Africa and the Mercosur countries related to trans-oceanic criminal activities such as drug-trafficking, arms smuggling and sea piracy. However, the common thread in the diplomatic exchanges between South Africa and the Mercosur countries concerns solidifying trade links and mutual investment. This is done not only to promote the concept of South-South relations, but also for South Africa to take advantage of her geo-strategic position as straddling two of the most important oceans in the world – the Atlantic Ocean and the Indian Ocean.

1.4 BILATERAL MILITARY CO-OPERATION BETWEEN SOUTH AFRICA AND THE MERCOSUR COUNTRIES

a. Some South American states, especially those that later formed Mercosur, had strong bilateral cultural, political and military ties with South Africa that predate WW I. These ties continued even after WW II and through the Cold War era – the period that coincided with vehement international condemnation of South Africa's political system. While some of the South American states defiantly maintained such ties at the risk of being ostracised by the international community for interacting with a *pariah* state, it is notable that South Africa provided incentives to sustain these relations. These incentives ranged from providing free military training in South African operational training schools, to bursaries at universities and encouraging South African investors to conduct subsidised business operations in selected countries. There is no documentary evidence that these countries also had to reciprocate such favours in kind, other than to ignore international condemnation of South Africa's political system or to provide support, directly or indirectly, at international fora such as the UN General Assembly.

b. South Africa's ability to 'penetrate' South America and to make an impact especially on those countries that later constituted Mercosur, was based largely on the insecurity of those states at the time. It is highly unlikely that South Africa would have made any progress if governments of such states were also not faced with strong internal and external challenges. This is evidenced by the fact that once these countries democratised during the mid-eighties, political and military ties with South Africa were severed immediately. However, it is also noteworthy that some of these ties were severed at a time when there were already indications that a political settlement between the South African government and the liberation movements was imminent.

c. The military relations that were re-established between South Africa and the Mercosur states after 1994 were not as intense as they were in the late seventies and early eighties. While most Mercosur states were enthusiastic in establishing military representation in South Africa, the latter was selective and cautious in its approach. The initial enthusiasm was due to a number of factors including the desire to show solidarity with the new South African government as most of them also had oppressive regimes in the past. It was possibly also to take advantage of the potential arms market (especially from Brazil's perspective) both in South Africa and the rest of the continent. The latter aspect is particularly important as most

foreign military representatives in South Africa are also accredited to other countries in the region, thus taking advantage of advanced communication facilities available in South Africa.

d. While it is true that some of the initial enthusiasm for military representation in South Africa and backed by exchange of high-profile visits by political and military dignitaries was aimed at obtaining a foothold in military issues in the country, it is not clear if that actually materialised. This observation is based on the fact that both South Africa and Brazil are significant arms-producing states from the developing world, and that both have strong anti-military lobby groups in the civil society, thus negatively affecting their budgetary allocation for defence. Furthermore, despite the fact that South Africa could be used as a launching pad to penetrate the African arms market, there is the challenge of limited buying power of African states and that most of the weapons used in African conflicts are low-tech and are largely obtained from the former Soviet Union republics.

1.5 MULTILATERAL SECURITY CO-OPERATION IN THE SOUTH ATLANTIC REGION

a. One of the perplexing hurdles regarding the prospects for regional security co-operation in the South Atlantic pertains to the geographic demarcation of the region. Furthermore, there is still no clarity about the manner in which extra-regional powers that have interests in the region (such as the UK) can be incorporated into the strategic interaction of littoral states without compromising on certain fundamental principles that render the trans-oceanic neighbours compatible. These extra-regional powers happen to be known nuclear states which may either provide military protection to the littoral states in times of need, or could equally pose a threat to the environment when they intend to transport nuclear material or nuclear weapons in the Atlantic Ocean. Furthermore, the littoral states of South Atlantic do not have the military capacity to prevent or threaten any of the nuclear states if the latter wanted to undermine the authority of the South Atlantic states, especially if the nuclear powers insist on using the high seas or international waters for transporting nuclear material, conducting military exercises or conducting scientific experiments that have a clear military applicability. Thus, it is imperative that a strong consensus and mutual understanding should exist between the South Atlantic littoral states and these extra-regional powers. However, there is no guarantee that the nuclear states will always abide by such a consensual

relationship with the South Atlantic states, particularly during times of war or when their national interests are threatened.

b. As much as the traditional hegemonic rivalry that existed between Argentina and Brazil has receded, there is still a perennial fear that political tensions may re-emerge as the latter seeks to entrench her influence in the region, while the former seeks to challenge it, *albeit* in less militaristic form.

c. There has always been a need to foster security co-operation on the hemispheric level. This was initiated during the Cold War era but the various models were not implemented. The main reason was that they included the incorporation of South Africa, which, at that stage, was still a *pariah* state. The hemispheric alliance for the Americas was successfully forged due to the US's overwhelming influence both in terms of finances and geopolitical clout it wielded on the bipolar world. However, the US's commitment to the Rio Treaty is now arguably less intense than was the case during the height of the Cold War. This is understandable because, with the demise of the former Soviet Union, there has been a significant reduction in military threats and a corresponding adjustment of budgets. However, it could be envisaged that the Rio Treaty would concentrate on the so-called 'new-generation' threats such as drug-trafficking, illicit transfer of nuclear and radioactive materials, and international terrorism. The latter will probably dominate the strategic thinking of the US, especially following the events of 11 September 2001.

d. The idea of a South Hemispheric military alliance – to be called SATO – modelled along the lines of NATO was never discredited. The main reason for its failure was largely due to the possibility of including South Africa. However, despite the fact that South Africa now has a democratic dispensation, it is highly unlikely that SATO will ever be formed, especially after the end of the Cold War. Thus, rather than pursuing the SATO idea, it may be recommended that the South Atlantic littoral states should concentrate on converting the ZPCSA into an organisation, such as the South Atlantic Rim Association (SARA). Since most South Atlantic littoral are already involved, in a significant way, in activities such as joint military exercises, it can be assumed that the formation of SARA would only be the formal institutionalisation of processes already underway.

2. ASSESSMENT

a. The elasticity of the concept of security, in its various forms, is susceptible to being exploited or abused by insecure and/or oppressive regimes for reasons of political expediency. The so-called 'new-generation threats' are normally not mutually exclusive, thus leading to possible over-securitisation of threats and the prescription of harsh measures even when dealing with relatively minor threats to stability such as riots and public disorder.

b. While it may be argued that one of the significant reasons for the formation of Mercosur was largely due to the realisation that Brazil was an unrivalled regional power, the main impetus for Mercosur was provided by the democratisation processes within member states. The traditional rivalries between Argentina and Brazil did not necessarily disappear with the formation of Mercosur but rather became a managed process. This is almost similar to the way the Russian Federation dealt with the Western Countries in the post-Cold War era where Russia conceded to the superiority of the latter without losing credibility.

c. The cementing of economic ties between South Africa and the Mercosur countries in the post-1994 period fell squarely in the emerging paradigm of the post-Cold War era where there was a dramatic ascendance of socio-economic issues. These ties had always existed but were limited by various UN Resolutions which proscribed interaction with South Africa. However, the success of South Africa's trade relations with Mercosur depended on the former's ability to act as the voice of the Southern African sub-region, with Brazil playing a similar role within Mercosur.

d. The bilateral and multilateral arrangements in the military sphere are an extension of the relations in the political and economic spheres. Other than regular, largely symbolic military exercises involving states such as the US and Britain, it is evident that the primary driving force behind such exercises are not military imperatives but political and economic factors. In the political sphere, there is clear collusion among states of the Global South to support one another in fora such as the UN. Economic factors are self-evident in their concerted effort in reviewing the rules of the WTO, NAFTA and the EU in order to allow products from the Global South to access the huge and rich markets of the Global North.

e. The ability of the South Atlantic littoral states to conduct combined military exercises and to commit themselves to ensuring that the whole South Atlantic Ocean remains nuclear-free, demonstrates the potential for an organisation that binds both sides of the ocean. There is also common purpose in dealing with transoceanic criminal activity. However, the main impediment to the realisation of such an organisation may be inadequate political will or preparedness of the littoral states to provide sufficient resources so that the organisation is not entirely dependent on handouts from the North. Even though the ZPCSA meets regularly, it does not seem to have reached the necessary maturity level where it could be converted into a fully-fledged organisation. Furthermore, the formation of such an organisation would require that Mercosur and the various sub-regional organisations from Africa be prepared to amend their founding constitutions in order to accommodate overlapping membership, which, in Africa, would include ECOWAS, CEEAC and SADC.

3. RESEARCH FINDINGS AND TESTING OF PROPOSITIONS

When this study was initiated, it was to be based on certain propositions and assumptions.

a. *First proposition*: "South Africa's security considerations are increasingly becoming inseparably entangled with those of her south-west Atlantic neighbours, notably Brazil and Argentina."

Findings: South Africa has taken up the challenge of security threats on the western shores quite seriously. This is demonstrated by the fact that South Africa is currently in the process of purchasing corvettes, which are much faster, more versatile in terms of armaments, and provide limited blue-sea capability. In addition, there are more scheduled and *ad hoc* joint military exercises in the South Atlantic Ocean than is the case in the Indian Ocean. This could be attributed to the fact that there is a change in focus in terms of the nature and scope of security threats. In addition to scheduled multilateral military exercises involving South Africa and the Mercosur countries, the former also has specific bilateral arrangements with Argentina and Brazil.

b. *Second Proposition:* "Security, in the broader sense which also includes social and economic dimensions, requires a holistic approach and South Africa's security

relations with the Mercosur grouping could offer numerous benefits for the general good of her citizens."

Findings: The emerging approach to security as confirmed in the various policy documents of the South African government such as the Constitution, 1996; White Paper on Defence, 1996 and the White Paper on Intelligence, 1994 seems to indicate that a broader understanding of the concept of security is being adopted. Furthermore, the current spending patterns which emphasise social development (for instance, education, health, electricity, safety and security, and provision for small and medium enterprises), also seem to attest to this observation. Despite the imperative of social development, the government has committed itself to long-term strategic defence packages to re-equip the SANDF. This demonstrates beyond doubt a balanced approach towards security.

c. *Third Proposition*: "The effects of the global crisis in markets which affected both developed and emergent markets at the end of the 1990s, showed that South Africa's virtual or benign neglect of Latin America can no longer be sustained if she is serious about being a global competitor of note."

Findings: While South Africa is acutely aware of the necessity for increased investment from, and trade relations with the Latin American countries, particularly those constituting Mercosur, there appears to be limited success in this respect. The so-called 'butterfly' approach adopted by the South African government in respect of trade links confirms the focus on North America and the EU, while residual trade takes place on the wings of the butterfly, that is in East Asia and Latin America. With Brazil and South Africa being regional powers in their respective sub-regions, there is limited complementarity in their markets and they are also competing for the same market of the Global North.

d. *Fourth Proposition:* "South Africa's global ambitions, including membership of the United Nations Security Council, can only materialise with considerable support from the Latin American countries."

Findings: South Africa has mobilised every possible international constituency in order to gain recognition as a credible international role-player. Some of the strategies used have been active involvement in conflict-resolution and management on the African continent, and also championing the cause of Africa's renewal programme through NEPAD (New Partnership for Africa's Development). In addition to these, South Africa assumed chairs of significant international bodies including the SADC, the NAM, the Commonwealth of Nations and some UN specialised bodies. In all these achievements, it is not clear what the role or influence of the Mercosur countries has been, but it appears negligible. Despite the perceived failures or blunders such as the handling of the anti-Aids drug programme and the 'silent diplomatic' approach during the apparent breakdown of law and order in Zimbabwe, South Africa is perceived by the international community as a credible ambassador for Africa. It can therefore be surmised that South Africa has successfully carved a niche in the international arena and does not necessarily need the Latin American countries to maintain that position.

4. RECOMMENDATIONS FOR FURTHER STUDY

This study has concentrated mainly on the security interactions among the littoral states of the South Atlantic region. It has highlighted the security concerns and strategic perceptions of these states and extra-regional powers in that region. However, it has not explored the security inter-linkages between the South Atlantic region and Antarctica. It is an open secret that while there are numerous conventions prohibiting military activity in Antarctica, various states are currently claiming ownership of certain portions of Antarctica. Some of these claims are not only disputed because they are new, but because they coincide or overlap with those that are being claimed by other countries. Given the volatility of the situation, it is evident that the apparently self-imposed restraint may not last long enough to settle all the claims. The moratorium on making new claims, which was imposed by the Antarctic Treaty when it was initially opened for signature, expired in the early nineties, and therefore states can now revive their territorial claims on Antarctica.

Being one of the original signatories, a claimant and active role-player in Antarctica, South Africa is bound to be entangled in the controversies over Antarctica. It is therefore important that a further study be conducted to determine the way in which South Africa's interests in

Antarctica can be affected and how to protect them. Such a study can identify threats and potential allies that could help secure South Africa's interests.

ABBREVIATIONS

- AC: Andean Community
- ACE: Agreement for Economic Complementarity / *Acuerdo Complementario Económico*
- AFTA: American Free Trade Agreement
- ALADI: *Asociación Latinoamerican de Integración (Latin American Integration Association - see also LAIA)*
- ALALC: *Asociación Latinoamericana de Libre Comercio* (see also LAFTA – English version)
- AMU/UMA: Arab Maghreb Union
- ANAD: *Accord de Non-Aggression et d'Assistance en Matière de Défence*
- ANC: African National Congress
- ANZERTA: Australia, New Zealand Closer Economic Relations Trade Agreement
- ANZUS Treaty: Australia, New Zealand and the United States Treaty
- APEC: Asia Pacific Economic Community
- APLA: Azanian People's Liberation Army
- ARSS: Amazon Region Surveillance System (see also SIVAM)
- ASEAN: Association of South-East Asian Nations
- ATLASUR: Atlantic South / South Atlantic
- AU: African Union
- CACM: Central American Common Market
- CAEU: Council of Arab Economic Unity
- CAMAS: South Atlantic Maritime Area Co-ordination
- CARICOM: Caribbean Community and Common Market (see also CCCM)
- CBMs: Confidence-building measures
- CCCM: Caribbean Community and Common Market (see also CARICOM)
- CCM: Council of the Common Market
- CEAO: *Communaute Economique L'Africa de l'quest*

- CEMAC: *Communauté économique en Afrique Centrale* (see also EMCCA)
- CEN: Centre of National Studies
- CET: Common External Tariff
- CEU: Customs and Economic Union (see also UDEAC)
- CGIC: Credit Guarantee Insurance Corporation
- CIA: Central Intelligence Agency
- CIS: Commonwealth of Independent States
- CMG: Common Market Group
- CODESA: Convention for a Democratic South Africa
- COIN: Counter-Insurgency
- CSBMs: Confidence- and Security-Building Measures
- CTBT: Comprehensive Nuclear Test Ban Treaty
- DFA: Department of Foreign Affairs
- DRC: Democratic Republic of Congo (former Zaire)
- ECOWAS: Economic Community of West African States
- ECSC: European Coal and Steel Community
- EEC: European Economic Community
- EEZ: Exclusive Economic Zone
- EMCCA: Economic and Monetary Community of Central Africa (see also CEMAC)
- ESCF: Economic Social Consultative Forum
- EU: European Union
- EURATOM: European Atomic Energy Community
- FDI: Foreign Direct Investment
- FEB: *Forcça Expedicionária Brasileira*
- FLS: Front-Line States
- GATT: General Agreement on Trade and Tariffs
- GDP: Gross Domestic Product
- GEAR: Growth, Employment and Redistribution
- GNP: Gross National Product
- GRULA: Latin American Group

- HSRC: Human Sciences Research Council
- IADB: Inter-American Development Bank
- IAEA: International Atomic Energy Agency
- ICJ: International Court of Justice
- IDC: Industrial Development Corporation
- IGAD: Inter-Governmental Developmental Authority
- IMF: International Monetary Fund
- IMO: International Maritime Organisation
- JPC: Joint Parliamentary Commission
- LAFTA Latin American Free Trade Area (see also ALALC – Spanish version)
- LAIA: Latin American Integration Association
- MAS: Mercosur Administrative Secretariat
- MERCOSUL: (Portuguese): *Mercado Común del Sul (Common Market of the South)*
- MERCOSUR: (Spanish): *Mercado Común del Sur (Common Market of the South)*
- MFN: Most Favoured Nation
- MID: Military Intelligence Division
- MK: Umkhonto weSizwe
- MNCs: Multi-national Corporations
- MP: Member of Parliament
- MST: Mutual Security Treaty
- MTC: Mercosur Trade Commission
- NAFTA: North American Free Trade Area
- NAM: Non-Aligned Movement
- NATO: North Atlantic Treaty Organisation
- NCACC: National Conventional Arms Control Committee
- NICs: Newly Industrialised Countries
- NIEO: New International Economic Order
- NP: National Party
- NPT: Non-Proliferation Treaty

- NSE: Non-Sensitive Equipment
- NWO: New World Order
- OAS: Organisation of American States
- OAU: Organisation of African Unity
- OECD: Organisation for Economic Co-operation and Development
- OPEC: Organisation of Petroleum Exporting Countries
- OSCE: Organisation for Security and Co-operation in Europe
- PAC: Pan-African Congress
- PICE: Program for Integration and Economic Co-operation
- POW: Prisoner of War
- PRC: People's Republic of China
- RDP: Reconstruction and Development Programme
- RSA: Republic of South Africa
- RSS: Regional Strategic Security (see also SER)
- SAAF: South African Air Force
- SAARC: South Asian Association for Regional Co-operation
- SADC: Southern African Development Community
- SADCC: Southern African Development Co-ordination Conference
- SADF: South African Defence Force
- SAFTA: South American Free Trade Area
- SAIIA: South African Institute for International Affairs
- SAMHS: South African Military Health Service
- SAN: South African Navy
- SANDF: South African National Defence Force
- SAPS: South African Police Service
- SARA: South Atlantic Rim Association
- SATO: South Atlantic Treaty Organisation
- SD: Staff Duties
- SEATO: South East Asia Treaty Organisation
- SELA: Latin American Economic System
- SER: *Seguridad Estraégica Regional* (see also RSS)
- SIDE: *Servicio Inteligencia del Estado*

- SIVAM: *Sistema de Vigilancia de Amazonia* (see also ARSS)
- SMSE: Sensitive Major Significant Equipment
- SSE: Sensitive Significant Equipment
- TNCs: Trans-national Corporations
- UCAPO: Union of Poor Peasants
- UCLAS: Unisa Centre for Latin American Studies
- UDEAC: *Union dounaière et économique de l'Afrique Centrale* (see also CEU)
- UDP: *Unidad Democratica Popular*
- UK: United Kingdom
- UN: United Nations
- UNCLAS: United Nations Convention on the Law of Seas
- UNDOF: United Nations Disengagement Observer Force
- UNDP: United Nations Development Programme
- UNEF: United Nations Emergency Force
- UNESCO: United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organisation
- UNHCR: United Nations High Commissioner for Refugees
- UNICEF: United Nations Children's Fund
- US: United States
- USSR: Union of Soviet Socialist Republics
- WCC: World Council of Churches
- WEU: Western European Union
- WTO: World Trade Organisation
- WW I: First World War
- WW II: Second World War
- ZPCSA: Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic

BIBLIOGRAPHY

1. PRIMARY SOURCES

1.1 Official Governmental Sources

- RSA. Address by President Nelson Mandela at the Mercosur Heads of State Summit, Ushuaia, Argentina, 24 July 1998. Information provided by the Office of the Presidency, Pretoria.
- RSA. Address by President Nelson Mandela at the state banquet in honour of President Eduardo Frei of Chile, Pretoria, 12 November 1998.
- RSA. Address by President Thabo Mbeki at the Mercosur Heads of State Summit, Brazil, 15 December 2000. Information provided by the Office of the Presidency.
- RSA. Information on Arms Transfers provided by the South African Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Conventional Arms Control, 26 August 1998.
- RSA. Information on Foreign Visits, Courses and Military Attachés provided by the Department of Defence Headquarters, Directorate Foreign Relations, Corporate Staff Division, Pretoria, 2 October 2001.
- RSA. Information on Joint Naval Military Exercises on the South Atlantic provided by the South African Department of Defence, Naval Headquarters, Pretoria, 12 November 2001.
- RSA. Joint Statement by President Thabo Mbeki of South Africa and President Fernando Herique Cardoso of Brazil, 13 December 2000. Issued by the Office of the Presidency.
- RSA. National Archives. PM 37/2/20. Pretoria.
- RSA. National Archives. PM 4/2/46. Pretoria.
- RSA. 1965. ***Debates of the House of Assembly (Hansard)***, Vol. 13, 12 March.
- RSA. 1994. ***White Paper on Intelligence***. Pretoria: Government Printer.
- RSA. 1996. ***White Paper on Defence***. Pretoria: Government Printer.
- RSA. 1966. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 16, 25 Januarie.
- RSA. 1968. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 22, 22 Maart.
- RSA. 1968. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 24, 13 Februarie.

- RSA. 1968. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 23, 27 Maart.
- RSA. 1968. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 23, 2 April.
- RSA. 1971. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 32, 12 Maart.
- RSA. 1975. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 58, 14 Februarie.
- RSA. 1975. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 58, 11 Februarie.
- RSA. 1976. ***Debatte van die Volksraad (Hansard)***, Deel 64, 22 Maart.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army File G/LIA/1/1***, Chief of Defence Staff, 31 January 1968.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/1/1***, Chief of Defence Staff, 11 January 1968.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4*** Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 3 February 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4*** Armed Forces Attaché (Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 3 March 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 11 February 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Intelligence, 6 January 1974.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4 (Argentinié)***, Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 31 March 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, File G/LIA/3/4 (Argentinié)***, Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 12 June 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, File G/LIA/3/4 (Argentinié)***, Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 13 September 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, File G/LIA/3/4 (Argentinié),*** Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 14 August 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, File G/LIA/3/4 (Argentinié)***, Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 31 March 1975.

- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, File G/LIA/3/4 (Argentinié)***, Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 10 June 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 39, File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 40, File G/LIA/3/4 (Argentinié)***, Capt (SAN) J.C. Ferris to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 3 September 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, Group 10, Box 39, File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 10 January 1974.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Chief of the Army, Group 39, File G/LIA/3/4***, Armed Forces Attaché (P.A.H. Tomlinson) to Chief of Staff Intelligence, 7 January 1975.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 1, File WA/M/103/7/1*** Montevideo**,** 9 December 1977.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 1, File WA/M/103/1/13***, Montevideo.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 1, File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo, 9 December 1983.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 1, File WA/M/103/1***, Montevideo.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 1, File WA/M/203/2/19/1***, Montevideo.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 1, File WA/M/103/7/1/13***, Montevideo.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 1, File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo, 9 December 1983.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 1, File WA/M/103/7/1***, Montevideo.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 11, File WA/M/203/2/19***, Montevideo Intelligence Collection of Information, Uruguay.

- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 16, File WA/B/203/2/20/1***, Montevideo, 5 January 1983.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 16, File WA/B/203/2/20/1***, Montevideo.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 26, File PARA/311/1/21,*** Montevideo, June 1977.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 26, File PARA/311/5***, Montevideo.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 26, File PARA/311/21***, Montevideo, 18 July 1977.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 4, File WA/M/105/11/B***, Montevideo, May 1978.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 2, Box 4, File WA/M/105/11/B***, Montevideo.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 3, Box 1, File AMI/514/3/5/1/1***, MLVA-Buenos Aires.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 3, Box 1, File AMI/514/3/5/1/1,*** MLVA-Buenos Aires.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 3, Box 1, File AMI/514/3/5/1***, MLVA-Buenos Aires.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Group 3, Box 1, File WA/M/103/7/1/13***, Montevideo Training Aid to Paraguay.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Military Attaché, Uruguay, Group 1, Box 1, File WA/M/3/1***, 9 May 1977.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Military Attaché, Uruguay, Group 1, Box 3, File WA/M/3/3***, Intelligence Uruguay & Other Countries, ('Atlantic: Latin Laager?') 1976. ***Latin America***, Vol. X, No. 49, 17 December.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Military Attaché, Uruguay, Group 1, Box 2, File WA/M/1/6***, Uruguay Army.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Military Attaché, Uruguay, Group 1, Box 2, File WA/M/1/4***, Uruguay Local Visits.
- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Military Attaché, Uruguay, Group 1, Box 2, File WA/M/1/7I***, Uruguay Rou Armada Nacional Navy.

- SANDF Archives (Documentation Centre): ***Military Attaché, Uruguay, Group 1, Box 2, File WA/M/1/5***, Uruguay Military Equipment.
- South African Department of Defence's Statement on Defence Acquisition Package. ***Bulletin***, 19 November 1998.
- South African Police Service Organised Crime Unit. ***Anti-Organised Crime Measures***, August 1997.
- USA White House. ***A National Security Strategy for a New Century***, May, 1997.

1.2 Inter-governmental Sources

- ***"Plan of Action Declaration"*** concluded at the end of the Zone of Peace and Co-operation Meeting held in Buenos Aires, Argentina, on 21-22 October 1998. Information provided by the South African Department of Foreign Affairs.
- ***Charter of the Organization of American States***, signed in Bogotá, Colombia, on 30 April 1948, and as amended by the following protocols: ***Protocol of Buenos Aires***, signed on 27 February 1967; ***Protocol of Cartagena de Indias***, signed on 5 December 1985; ***Protocol of Washington***, signed on 14 December 1992, and ***Protocol of Managua***, signed on 10 June 1993.
- ***ECOWAS Protocol on Non-Aggression*** signed in Lagos on 22 April 1978.
- ***ECOWAS Protocol Relating to Mutual Assistance on Defence*** signed in Freetown on 29 May 1981.
- ***Inter-American Conference for the Maintenance of Continental Peace and Security***, signed on 9 February 1947, Rio de Janeiro, Brazil.
- ***Inter-American Treaty of Reciprocal Assistance***, signed in Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, on 2 September 1947.
- Minutes of a Meeting in ***Preparation of the 4th Meeting of the Zone of the Peace and Co-operation of the South Atlantic***, held in Pretoria, on 15 November 1995.
- Minutes of a ***Meeting of the Member States of the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic***, held in Pretoria, on 15 August 1995.
- NATO Office of Information and Press. 1995. ***NATO Handbook***. Brussels: NATO Office of Information and Press.

- OAS General Secretariat. ***OAS Resolution 1080 "Representative Democracy"***, Twenty-First General Assembly of the Organization of American States, Santiago, Chile, June 1991.
- OAS General Secretariat. ***Protocol of Washington***, approved on 14 December 1992, at the Sixteenth Special Session of the General Assembly, Washington, D.C., United States of America.
- ***Protocol of Ouro Preto***, signed by the Mercosur member states in Ouro Preto, Brazil, 17 December 1994.
- ***Protocol on the Southern African Development Community (SADC) Organ for Politics, Defence and Security***, signed in Gaberone, Botswana, on 28 June 1996.
- ***Southern African Development Community Treaty***, signed in Windhoek, 17 August 1992.
- ***Treaty of Asunción*** signed on 26 March 1991 in Asunción, Paraguay.
- ***Treaty on the Prohibition of Nuclear Weapons in Latin America (Tlatelolco Treaty)***, signed in Tlatelolco, Mexico, on 14 February 1967.
- United Nations Development Programme (UNDP). 1994. ***Human Development Report***. UNDP.
- United Nations General Assembly Press Release, ***GA/9165 of 14 November 1996***.
- United Nations General Assembly ***Resolution 49/26 of 22 December 1994***.
- United Nations General Assembly ***Resolution 49/84 of 11 January 1995.***
- United Nations General Assembly ***Resolution 50/18 of 7 December 1995.***
- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/41/11 of 27 October 1986***.
- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/42/16 of 10 November 1987***.
- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/43/23 of 14 November 1988***.
- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/45/36 of 1990***.

- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/48/23 of 24 November 1993***.
- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/46/19 of 25 November 1991***.
- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/51/52 of 10 December 1996.***
- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/47/61 of 9 December 1992***.
- United Nations General Assembly Resolution taken during Plenary Meeting on "Declaration of a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***A/RES/50/77 of 12 December 1995.***
- United Nations Secretary General. ***Report on the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic***, 24 October 1995.

2. SECONDARY SOURCES

2.1 Books and Yearbooks

- Al-Mashat, A.M.M. 1985 ***National Security in the Third World***. London: Westview Press.
- Atkins, G.P. 1989. ***Latin America in the International Political System***. Oxford: Westview Press.
- Ayoob, M. 1995. ***The Third World Security Predicament: State Making, Regional Conflict, and the International System***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Banks, A.S. Day, A.J. and Muller, T.C. (eds.) 1997. ***Political Handbook of the World, 1997***. New York: CSA Publications.
- Barber, J. "Regional Co-operation and Integration: South Africa, the Southern African Development Community (SADC) and *Mercado Commun del Sur* (Mercosur)", in Guimarães, S.P. (ed.) 1996. ***South Africa and Brazil: Risks and***

Opportunities in the Turmoil of Globalisation. Rio de Janeiro: International Relations Research Institute.

- Barber, W.E. "National Security Policy", in Louw, M.H.H. (ed.) 1978. ***National Security: A Modern Approach***. Pretoria: Institute for Strategic Studies.
- Blechman, B.M. "International Peace and Security in the Twenty-First Century", in Booth, K. (ed.) 1998. ***Statecraft and Security: The Cold War and Beyond***. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Booth, K. "War, Security and Strategy: Towards a Doctrine for Stable Peace", in Booth, K. (ed.) 1991. ***New Thinking About Strategy and International Security***. London: Harper Collins Academic.
- Bouzas, R. 1999. "Mercosur's External Trade Negotiations: Dealing with a Congested Agenda", in Roett, R. (ed.) ***Mercosur: Regional Integration, World Markets***. London: Lynne Reinner Publishers.
- Brown, H. 1983. ***Thinking About National Security: Defense and Foreign Policy in a Dangerous World***. Colorado: Westview Press.
- Butfoy, A. 1997. ***Common and Strategic Reform: A Critical Analysis***. London: Macmillan.
- Buzan, B. 1991. "Is International Security Possible?" in Booth, K. (ed.) ***New Thinking About Strategy and International Security***. London: Harper Collins Academic.
- Buzan, B. 1991. ***People, States & Fear: An Agenda for International Security in the Post-Cold War Era***. Second Edition. London: Harvester Wheatsheaf.
- Buzan, B. 1997. "Regions and Regionalism in Global Perspective", in Cawthra, G. & Møller, B. (eds.) ***Defensive Restructuring of the Armed Forces in Southern Africa***. Sydney: Ashgate.
- Calvert, P. 1994. ***International Politics of Latin America***. Manchester: Manchester University Press.
- Cawthra, G. "Prospects for Common Security in Southern Africa", in Cawthra, G. and Møller, B. 1997 ***Defensive Restructuring of the Armed Forces in Southern Africa***. Sydney: Ashgate.
- Child, J. "South American Geopolitics and Antarctica: Confrontation or Cooperation?", in Kelly, P. and Child, J. (eds.) 1988. ***Geopolitics of the Southern Cone and Antarctica***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers.

- De Hoyos, R. "Malvinas/Falklands, 1982-1988: The New Gilbratar in the South Atlantic?", in Kelly, P. and Child, J. (eds.) 1988. ***Geopolitics of the Southern Cone and Antarctica***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Deutsch, K. et al. 1957. ***Political Community and the North Atlantic Area***. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Du Plessis, L. "The Challenge of Effective Sub-Saharan Maritime Defence", in Du Plessis, L. and Hough, M. (eds.) 1998. ***Protecting Sub-Saharan Africa: The Military Challenge***. Pretoria: Human Sciences Research Council (HSRC).
- Edmonds, M. and Mills, G. 1998. ***Beyond the Horizon: Defence, Diplomacy and South Africa's Maritime Opportunities***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs.
- Esterhuysen, P. (ed.) 1998. ***Africa A-Z: Continental & Country Profiles***. Pretoria: Africa Institute of South Africa.
- Evans, G. and Newnham, J. 1990. ***The Dictionary of World Politics: A Reference Guide to Concepts, Ideas and Institutions***. London: Harvester Wheatsheaf.
- Ferm, R. and Berggren, C. "Arms Control and Disarmament Agreements", in SIPRI. 2001. ***SIPRI Yearbook 2001: Armaments, Disarmament and International Security***. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Fischer, D. 1993. ***Nonmilitary Aspects of Security: A Systems Approach***. Aldershot: United Nations Institute for Disarmament Research.
- Gamba-Stonehouse, V. 1989. ***Strategy in the Southern Oceans: A South American View***. London: Pinter Publishers.
- Gill, P. 1994. ***Policing Politics: Security Intelligence and the Liberal Democratic State***. London: Frank Cass
- Goçalves, G.B. "Mercosur Today: Choices and Challenges", in Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. (eds.) 1999. ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA).
- Grove, E. "Naval Co-operation in the South Atlantic", in Mills, G. (ed.) 1995. ***Maritime Policy for Developing Nations***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA).
- Halliday, F. 1994. ***Rethinking International Relations***. London: Macmillan Press.

- Hartland-Thunberg, P. "National Economic Security: Interdependence and Vulnerability", in Alting von Geusau, F.A.M and Pelkamans, J. (eds.) 1982. ***National Economic Security***. Tilburg: John F. Kennedy Institute.
- Hirst, M. "The Foreign Policy of Brazil: From the Democratic Transition to its Consolidation", in Munõz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996. ***Latin American Nations in World Politics***. Boulder, Westview Press.
- Holsti, K.J. 1992. ***International Politics: A Framework for Analysis***, Sixth Edition. London: Prentice-Hall (UK).
- Hufbauer, G.C. and Elliott, K.A. "The International Economy with a National Security Perspective", in Blechman, B.M. and Luttwak, E.N. (eds.) 1987. ***Global Security: A Review of Strategic and Economic Issues***. London: Westview Press.
- Kegley, C.W. & Wittkopf, E.R. 1997. ***World Politics: Trends and Transformation***, Sixth Edition. New York: St. Martin's Press.
- Krasno, J. "Brazil", in Chase, R. Hill, E. and Kennedy, P. (eds.) 1999. ***The Pivotal States: A Framework for US Policy in the Developing World***. London: W.W. Norton & Company.
- Kriegler, J. (ed.) 1993. ***The Oxford Companion to Politics of the World***. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- MacFarlane, S.N. "The Impact of Superpower Collaboration on the Third World", in Weiss, T.G. and Kessler, M.A. (eds.) 1991. ***Third World Security in the Post-Cold War Era***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Maher, J. et al. (eds.) 2001. ***The Europa World Year Book 2001, Vols. 1 & II.*** London: Europa Publications.
- Mangold, P. 1990. ***National Security and International Relations***. London: Routedge.
- Marchwald, R.A. "Mercosur-SADC: Prospects for a South-South Co-operation", in Guimarães, S.P. (ed.) 1996. ***South Africa and Brazil: Risks and Opportunities in the Turmoil of Globalisation***. Rio de Janeiro: International Relations Research Institute.
- Martins, D. 1995. "Brazil - The Armed Forces of a Regional Superpower." ***Jane's Intelligence Review Yearbook: The World in Conflict 1994/95***. Coulsdon: Jane's Information Group.

- Mills, G. "Lesotho: Between Independence and Incorporation", in Benjamin, L. and Gregory, C. (eds.) 1992. ***Southern Africa at the Crossroads? Prospects for Stability and Development in the 1990s***. Rivonia: Justified Press.
- Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. "Introduction and Acknowledgements", in Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. (eds.) 1999. ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA).
- Mittleman, J. and Falk, R. "Global Hegemony and Regionalism", in Calleya, S.C. (ed.) 2000. ***Regionalism in the Post-Cold War World***. Aldershot: Ashgate.
- Muir, R. 1981. ***Modern Political Geography***, Second Edition. London: The Macmillan Press Ltd.
- Munõz, H. "Collective Action for Democracy in the Americas", in Munõz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996. ***Latin American Nations in World Politics***. Boulder, Westview Press.
- Munõz, H. "The Dominant Themes in Latin American Foreign Relations: An Introduction", in Munõz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996. ***Latin American Nations in World Politics***. Boulder: Westview Press.
- Mutimer, D. "Beyond Strategy: Critical Thinking and the New Security Studies", in Snyder, C.A. (ed.) 1999. ***Contemporary Security and Strategy***. London: Macmillan Press.
- Mutschler, C. "Human Security in the Southern African Context – Concepts and Challenges", in Mutschler, C. and Reyneke, E. (eds.) 1999. ***Human Security in the Southern African Context: Proceedings of the Pugwash Symposium, 7-10 June 1998***, ***Midrand South Africa***. Pretoria: Pugwash South Africa.
- Nef, J. 1999. ***Human Security and Mutual Vulnerability: The Global Political Economy of Development and Underdevelopment***, Second Edition. Johannesburg: International Development Research Centre.
- Neu, C.R. and Wolf, C. 1994. ***Economic Dimensions of Security***. Santa Monica: RAND.
- Nkiwane, S.M. 1993. ***Regional Security and Confidence-Building Processes: Southern Africa in the 1990s***. New York: United Nations.

- Norton, A.R. "The Security Legacy of the 1980s in the Third World", in Weiss, T.G. and Kessler, M.A. (eds.) 1991. ***Third World Security in the Post-Cold War Era***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Papp, D.S. 1992. ***Contemporary International Relations: Framework for Understanding***, Third Edition. New York: Macmillan Publishing Company.
- Pereira, L.V. "Towards Common Market of the South: Mercosur's Origins, Evolution, and Challenges", in Roett, R. (ed.) 1999. ***Mercosur: Regional Integration, World Markets***. Boulder: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Romm, J.J. 1993. ***Defining National Strategy: The Non-Military Aspects***. New York: Council of Foreign Relations Press.
- Rosselli, E. "Mercosur's External Agenda", in Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. (eds.) 1999. ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA).
- Russell, R. "Argentina: Ten Years of Foreign Policy", in Kelly, P. and Child, J. (eds.) 1988. ***Geopolitics of the Southern Cone and Antarctica***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Sandler, T. and Harley, K. 1995. ***The Economics of Defense***. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Sharpe, R. (ed.) 1997. ***Jane's Fighting Ships, 1997-1998***, ***100th Edition***. Coulsdon: Jane's Information Group Ltd.
- Shuman, M.H. and Harvey, H. 1993. ***Security Without War: A Post-Cold War Foreign Policy***. Oxford: Westview Press.
- Singer, P. "Globalization: What is all about?", in Guimarães, S.P. (ed.) 1996. ***South Africa and Brazil: Risks and Opportunities in the Turmoil of Globalisation***. Rio de Janeiro: International Relations Research Institute.
- Sköns, E. et al. "Military Expenditure and Arms Production", in Stockholm International Peace Research Institute (SIPRI). 2001. ***SIPRI Yearbook: Armaments, Disarmament and International Security***. Stockholm: Oxford University Press.
- Snyder, C.A. "Regional Security Structures", in Snyder, C.A. (ed.) 1999. ***Contemporary Security and Strategy***. London: Macmillan Press.

- South African Institute of International Affairs. 2000. ***The South African Yearbook of International Affairs, 2000/2001***. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs.
- Thahane, T. and Van der Merwe, E. "Mercosur and SADC: Investment and Trade Linkages", in Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. (eds.) 1999. ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America & SADC in Southern Africa***. Johannesburg: SAIIA.
- The International Institute for Strategic Studies (IISS). 2000. ***The Military Balance, 2000/2001***. London: Oxford University Press.
- Thomas, C. 1987. ***In Search of Security: The Third World in International Politics***. Boulder: Rienner Publishers.
- Tulchin, J.S. "Continuity and Change in Argentine Foreign Policy", in Munõz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996. ***Latin American Nations in World Politics***. Boulder, Westview Press.
- Utagawa, R. "Unconventional Security Threats: An Economist's View", in Taylor, R. and Sato, S. (eds.) 1995. ***Future Sources of Global Conflict***, Vol. IV. London: Royal Institute of International Affairs.
- Varas, A. "Soviet Union- Latin American Relations: A Historical Perspective", in Muñoz, H. and Tulchin, J.S. (eds.) 1996. ***Latin American Nations in World Politics***, Second Edition. Boulder: Westview Press.
- Venter, D. 1996. "South Africa, Brazil and South Atlantic Security: Towards a Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic", in Pinheiro Guimarães, S. (ed.) ***South Africa and Brazil: Risks and Opportunities in the Turmoil of Globalization***. Rio de Janeiro: International Relations Research Insititute.
- Waisman, C.H. "Argentina: Capitalism and Democracy", in Diamond, L. et. al (eds.) 1999. ***Democracy in Developing Countries: Latin America***, Second Edition. London: Lynner Rienner Publishers.
- Wallander, C.A. "Soviet Policy Towards the Third World in the 1990s", in Weiss, T.G. and Kessler, M.A. (eds.) 1991. ***Third World Security in the Post-Cold War Era***. London: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Whittaker, D.J. 1995. ***United Nations in Action***. London: UCL Press.
- Zacharias, A. "From Closed to Open Regionalism", in Mills, G. and Mutschler, C. (eds.) 1999. ***Exploring South-South Dialogue: Mercosur in Latin America &***

SADC in Southern Africa. Johannesburg: South African Institute of International Affairs (SAIIA).

- Zarimpas, N. "The Illicit Traffic in Nuclear and Radioactive Materials", in SIPRI. 2001. ***SIPRI Yearbook 2001: Armaments, Disarmament and International Security***. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

2.2 Journals

- "Atlantic: Latin Laager?". ***Latin America***, Vol. X, No. 49, 17 December 1976.
- "Farmers Oppose Free Trade". ***NAFTA & Inter-American Trade Monitor***, Vol. 3, No. 7, April 5, 1996.
- Akinrinade, S. 2001. "Sub-Regional Co-operation in West Africa: The ECOWAS Mechanism for Conflict Management in Perspective." ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol. XXIII, No. 1, May.
- Anglaril, N.B. 1995. "Argentina's Relations with Africa: The Myths and Realities of Co-operation between the Countries on the Southern Hemisphere." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 11, No. 1.
- Baldwin, D.A. 1995. "Security Studies and the End of the Cold War." ***World Politics***, Vol. 48, October.
- Baldwin, D.A. 1997. "The Concept of Security." ***Review of International Studies***, Vol 23, No. 1.
- Bellay, I. 1981. "Towards a Theory of International Security". ***Political Studies***, Vol. 29, No. 1.
- Booth, K. 1994. "A Security Regime in Southern Africa: Theoretical Considerations." ***Southern African Perspectives: A Working Paper Series***, No. 30.
- Broekman, D.A. 1998. "A South Atlantic Rim Association: From a Notion to a Reality?" ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 14, No. 1.
- Campbell, K. 2000. "Good Time for South-South Trade Bridge." ***Engineering News***, Vol. 20, 21-27 April.
- Campbell, K. 2000. "South African Navy Participates in Fleet Review Commemorating 500th Anniversary of the Discovery of Brazil." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 16, No. 2.

- Campbell, K. 2000. "Argentina at Africa Aerospace and Defence 2000 and SAAF 80." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 16, No. 2.
- Capdevila, G. 1998. "Disarmament: Treaty Targets Argentina, Brazil and Chile." ***Inter Press Service***, 4 May.
- Carasales, J.C. 1996. "A Surprising About-Face: Argentina and the NPT." ***Security Dialogue***, Vol. 27, No. 3.
- Cleary, S. 1998. "Mercosul's Experience: Implications for the SADC." ***South African Journal of International Affairs***, Vol. 6, No. 1, Summer.
- De Noronha Goyos, D. 1995. "Mercosul Structures and Perspectives." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 11, No. 1.
- De Souza, A. 2000. "Lessons from Patagonia." ***Finance Week***, 7 April.
- Garnett, J.C. 1989. "National Security and Threat Perception." ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol XI, No. 2.
- Haftendorn, H. 1991. "The Security Puzzle: Theory-Building and Discipline-Building in International Security." ***International Studies Quarterly,*** No. 35, March.
- Hallerbach, R.F. 1992. "Shifts in the International Balance of Power – Implications for Regional Peace and Security after the End of the Cold War." ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol. XIV, No. 1.
- Hough, M. 1981. "National Security in the RSA." ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol. No. 9, June.
- Hough, M. 1995. "Crime as a National Security Issue in South Africa." ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol. XVII, No. 2, November.
- Hough, M. 1998. "Collective Security and its Variants: A Conceptual Analysis with Specific Reference to SADC and ECOWAS." ***Strategic Review for Southern Africa***, Vol. XX, No. 2.
- Institute for Agriculture and Trade Policy. 1996. "Chile and Mercosur Sign Pact." ***NAFTA & Inter-American Trade Monitor***, Vol. 3, No. 13, July12.
- Institute for Agriculture and Trade Policy. 1996. "Mercosur Fights Back." ***NAFTA & Inter-American Trade Monitor***, Vol. 3, No. 14, 13 December.
- Hakim, P. 1996. "Good News From Paraguay: A Coup d'Etat Falls Flat." ***Christian Science Monitor***, Boston, 30 May.

- Khanyile, M.B. 1998. "Brazil-South Africa Relations: The Military Dimension." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 14, No. 2.
- Khanyile, M.B. 2000. "South Africa's Arms Transfers in 1997: Morality and Reality." ***Africa Insight***, Vol. 29, No. 3-4.
- Kolodziej, E.A. and Lepingwell, J.W.R. 1997. "Reconstructing European Security: Cutting NATO Enlargement Down to Size." ***Contemporary Security Policy***, Vol. 18, No. 1.
- Leggett, T. 1999. "Drugs in South Africa: The Latest Trends." ***Nedbank ISS Crime Index***, Vol. 3, No. 5, September - October.
- Leysens, A. 1992. "The Political Economy of South Africa's Relations with Latin America: Past Developments and Prospects for Future Co-operation with the Context of South Africa." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 8, No. 1, March.
- Robinson, T. and Boutwell, J. 1996. "South Africa's Arms Industry: A New Era of Democratic Accountability?" ***Armed Forces & Society***, Vol. 22, No. 4, Summer.
- Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1992. "The Forgotten Dimension: South African/Latin American Relations Past and Present." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 8 No. 2, September.
- Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1995. "Brazil's New Role in South and Southern Africa: An Interview with Luiz Felipe Lampreia." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 11, No. 2, July - December.
- Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1995. "Chilean Minister of the Economy Visits South Africa." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 11, No. 1, January - June.
- Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1996. "Argentinean Defence Specialist Visits the Centre." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 12, No. 2, July – December.
- Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1997. "Brazil and South Africa: An Evolving Relationship between Regional Powers." ***Politeia***, Vol. 16, NO. 2.
- Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1999. "President Mandela Strengthens Relations: State Visit to Brazil and Argentina, and Address to the Mercosur Summit at Ushuaia." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 15, No. 1.
- Roelofse-Campbell, Z. 1999. Consolidating Ties Between Brazil and South Africa: An Interview with Ivan Cannabrava." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 15, No. 2.
- Rothschild, E. 1995. "What is Security?" ***Doedelus***, Vol. 124, No. 3.

- Saraiva, J.F. 1997. "A Comparative Analysis of the Foreign Policies of South Africa and Brazil." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 13, No. 2, July - December.
- Sardenberg, R.M. 1998. "Windows of Opportunity: Consolidating the Zone of Peace and Co-operation in the South Atlantic." ***Unisa Latin American Report***, Vol. 14, No. 2.
- Sperling, J. and Kirchner, E. 1998. "Economic Security and the Problem of Cooperation in post-Cold War Europe." ***Review of International Studies***. Vol. 24, No. 2.
- Valenzuela, A. 1997. "Paraguay: The Coup That Didn't Happen." ***Journal of Democracy***, No. 8.1.
- Van Bleck, C. 1996. "SA - Brazil: A New Era of Friendship." ***SA Now***, Vol. 1, No. 10, November - December.

2.3 Occasional Publications and Papers

- Du Plessis, A. 1987. "South Africa and the South Atlantic Ocean: A Maritime-Strategic Analysis." ***Institute for Strategic Studies University of Pretoria (ISSUP) Occasional Paper***, Pretoria, Number 24.
- Gæger, N. 1999. "Security Organisations in Europe - Lessons Learned from the European Experience." ***The African Centre for Constructive Resolution of Disputes (ACCORD) Occasional Paper***, Durban, Number 7.
- Heine, J. "South-South Relations after the Cold War". ***Paper*** presented by the Ambassador of Chile to the Foreign Affairs Committee, National Assembly, South African Parliament, Cape Town, 7 June 1995.
- Leysens, A. 1992. "South Africa's Relations with Latin America, 1966-1988. ***Occasional Paper***. Pretoria: Unisa Centre for Latin American Studies, November.
- Malan, M. 1999. "The OAU and African Subregional Organisations - A Closer Look at the 'Peace Pyramid'". ***ISS Papers***, Paper 36, January.
- Sayigh, Y. 1990. "Confronting the 1990s: Security in the Developing Countries." ***Adelphi Papers***, No. 251.
- Shaw, M. 1998. "Organised Crime in Post-Apartheid South Africa." ***Occasional Paper***, No. 28, Institute for Security Studies (ISS), Pretoria, January.

- Solomon, H. 1996. "Water Security in Southern Africa", in Solomon, H. (ed.) ***Sink or Swim: Water, Resource and State Co-operation***. IDP Monograph Series, No.6.
- Vale, P. "New Trends in Global Security: Some Questions from the South". ***Paper*** presented to the International Working Group on America's Task in a Changed World, Washington, October 1991.
- Viejobueno, S.A.M. 1995. "Mercosur: A Decisive Step Towards South American Economic Revival." ***Occasional Paper***, No. 10, November. Pretoria: Unisa Centre for Latin American Studies.
- Yoroms, J.G. 1999. "Mechanisms for Conflict Management in ECOWAS." ***The African Centre for the Constructive Resolution of Disputes (ACCORD)***, Durban, No. 8.

2.4 Newspapers

- ***Beeld*** (Johannesburg), 21 Maart 2000.
- ***Buenos Aires Herald*** (Buenos Aires), 6 February 1975.
- ***Business Day*** (Johannesburg), 20 July 1998.
- ***Business Day*** (Johannesburg), 25 April 2000.
- ***Business Day*** (Johannesburg), 19 November 1998.
- ***Cape Argus*** (Cape Town), 18 June 2001.
- ***Cape Argus*** (Cape Town), 31 May 2001.
- ***Cape Times*** (Cape Town), 27 July 2001.
- ***Cape Times*** (Cape Town), 8 October 1998.
- ***Die Burger*** (Cape Town), 30 October 1998.
- ***Finance Week***, 7 April 2000.
- ***Finansies & Tegniek***, 8 October 1999.
- ***New York Times*** (New York), 18 December 1998.
- ***Sunday Independent*** (Johannesburg), 11 March 1997.
- ***The Star*** (Johannesburg), 11 December 2000.
- ***The Star*** (Johannesburg), 24 January 2000.
- ***The Star*** (Johannesburg), 24 July 1998.
- ***The Star*** (Johannesburg), 30 October 1998.
- ***The Star*** (Johannesburg), 7 December 1999.

- ***The Star*** (Johannesburg), 9 June 2000.

2.5 Internet

- www.demon.co.uk/Itamaraty/artig6.html.
- US Central Intelligence Agency (CIA). 2000. ***World Factbook 2000***. www.odci.government/cia/publications/factbook/geos.
- South African Department of Foreign Affairs (DFA). "Profile of Bilateral Relations: Federative Republic of Brazil." www.dfa.government.za/for-relations/bilateral/brazil.htm.
- www.dfa.government.za/for-relations/bilateral/brazil.htm.
- www.mercopress.com, 22 November 2000.
- www.iol.co.za (21 July 2001).
- www.iol.co.za (26 July 2001).
- www.iol.co.za (29 July 2001)
- www.iol.co.za (2 August 2001).
- Pen, M. "Candomblé: A Glimpse at Brazil's African Roots", 22 October 2000. www.infobrazil.com.
- http://srch1.un.org/ga/documents/gadocs.htm
- Marcopress News Agency. "Naval Defence Scaled Down." ***Falklands / Malivinas News***, 21 March 1999 (www.marcopress.com).
- www.untreaty.un.org